

Σ 13106

NINETY-TWO DAYS

By the same author

ROSSETTI: HIS LIFE AND WORKS.

LABELS: EASTERN MEDITERRANEAN TRAVEL.

REMOTE PEOPLE.



THE WRITER, AT TAKUTU RIVER

NINETY-TWO DAYS

by

EVELYN WAUGH

Author of "Decline and Fall," "Labels," etc.

With a Map and 24 Illustrations



DUCKWORTH

3 Henrietta Street, London, W.C.2

1934

First published in 1934
All rights reserved

WITH LOVE TO
DIANA

CONTENTS

	<i>Page</i>
CHAPTER I - - - - -	11
Reasons for visiting Guiana—and for writing about it—family connexion with Trinidad—Georgetown—History of Rupununi—Mr. Bain—departure.	
CHAPTER II - - - - -	40
Mr. Bain's conversation—New Amsterdam—the Berbice—Mr. Bain's solicitude—Yetto ■ ■ party—the savannah—Mr. Bain's missing links—the bush—a snake—Kurupukari—farine and tasso—arrival of stores.	
CHAPTER III - - - - -	68
Difficulties of transport—second start—Yetto, Price and Sinclair—Jagger—Yetto's better days—Surana—Anai—an ill-natured horse—a mystic.	
CHAPTER IV - - - - -	91
Daguar's ranch—Hart's ranch—St. Ignatius Mission—Figueredo—the Boundary Commission.	
CHAPTER V - - - - -	111
Brazilian savannah—amenities of Boa Vista—attempts ■ improve Boa Vista—"the Company"—Father Alcuin—Mr. Steingler—the boundary commissioner—horse-dealing—the ■ ■ Prior—escape from Boa Vista.	
CHAPTER VI - - - - -	146
Leaving Boa Vista—change of route—lost ■ the savannah—pleasures of travelling—change of route—Karasabai—Tipuru.	
CHAPTER VII - - - - -	180
On foot in the hills—cabouri fly—Kenaima—Karto—djiggas—Kurikabar—Santa Maria—Anundabar—Mr. Winter—base ■ ■ of Eusebio.	

CONTENTS

Page

CHAPTER VIII - - - - -

Diamond washing and selling—Upper Potaro—a bad family—Kaieteur—Lower Potaro—Amatuk.

CHAPTER IX - - - - - 225

Lower Potaro—Kangaruma—regular communications—Tumatumari—Rockstone—Wismar—Georgetown—conclusion.

ILLUSTRATIONS

From photographs taken by the Author

THE WRITER, AT TAKUTU RIVER	- - -	Frontispiece
BRIDLING OF RUPUNUNI HORSE	- - -	Facing page 46
HOUSE AND CATTLE TRAIL	- - -	58
ESSEQUIBO FROM MOUNTAIN	- - -	60
SINCLAIR, PRICE AND YETTO	- - -	70
RUPUNUNI VAQUEIRO WITH OX-HEAD	- - -	75
FIRST VIEW OF SAVANNAH AND ANAI	- - -	80
ANAI HOUSE. SINCLAIR AND CHESTNUT STALLION		82
MR. HART'S RANCH AT PIRARA	- - -	96
FATHER MATHER AT ST. IGNATIUS MISSION	- -	101
MIDDAY HALT AT DRY CREEK AND BRAZILIAN SAVANNAH. DAVID AND FRANCISCO UNSADDLING	-	113
MARCO RECEIVING COFFEE FROM BRAZILIAN RANCHERS		148
MACUSHI INDIAN AND CHILD AT MARAKANATA VILLAGE	- - - - -	162
ANTONIO'S WIFE	- - - - -	178
MACUSHI AND TIPURU VILLAGE	- - -	182
FATHER KEARY RECEIVING CASSIRI AND PATAMONA	- - - - -	185
PATAMONA REMOVING DJIGGAS FROM HUSBAND'S FEET	- - - - -	188
PATAMONA CHILD AT KURIKABARU	- - -	190

MR. WINTER'S	- - - - -	<i>Facing page</i>	
MR. WINTER'S	- - - - -		
MR. WINTER'S DIAMOND WORKINGS AT			
CREEK - - - - -			206
MR. WINTER'S DIAMOND			
CREEK - - - - -			208
BOAT	POTARO - - - - -		214
POTARO LANDING	- - - - -		230
A MAP OF BRITISH GUIANA AND PART OF			
SAVANNAH, SHOWING THE AUTHOR'S ROUTE -			II

CHAPTER I

Reasons for visiting Guiana—and for writing about it—family connexion with Trinidad—Georgetown—History of Rupununi—Mr. Bain—departure.

October 12th, 1933.

AT last, relentlessly, inevitably, the lugubrious morning has dawned; day of wrath which I have been postponing week by week for five months.

Late last evening I arrived at the house I have borrowed and established myself in absolute solitude in the deserted nurseries; this morning immediately after breakfast I arranged the writing table with a pile of foolscap, clean blotting paper, ■ full inkpot, folded maps, ■ battered journal and ■ heap of photographs; then in very low spirits I smoked a pipe and read two newspapers, walked to the village post office in search of Relief nibs, returned and brooded with disgust over the writing table, smoked another pipe, and wrote two letters, walked into the paddock and looked at ■ fat pony; then back to the writing table. It ■■■ the end of the tether. There ■■■ nothing for it but to start writing this book.

I read the other day that when his biographer revealed that Trollope did his work by the clock, starting regularly ■■ though ■■ office and stopping, ■■■ in the middle of ■ sentence, when his time was up, there ■■■ ■■ immediate drop in his reputation and sales. People in his time believed the romantic legend of inspired genius; they

enjoyed the idea of the [redacted] artist — Rossetti unhinged by chloral, closeted with women of low repute, or Swinburne sprawling under the table; they respected the majestic and august, Tennyson, Carlyle and Ruskin in white whiskers and black cloaks; what they could not believe [redacted] that anyone who lived like themselves, got up and went [redacted] bed methodically and turned out [redacted] regular quantity of work [redacted] day, could possibly write anything worth reading. Nowadays, of course, opinion is all the other way. The highest tribute one can pay [redacted] [redacted] is to [redacted] that an author employs [redacted] else to write for him. Most Englishmen dislike work and grumble about their jobs and writers now make it so clear they hate writing, that their public may become excusably sympathetic and urge them to try something else. I have seldom [redacted] a male novelist who enjoyed doing his work, and [redacted] heard of one who gave it up and took to anything more congenial. I believe it would have been better for trade if writers had kept up the bluff about inspiration. As it is the tendency is to the opposite exaggeration of regarding us all as mercenary drudges. The truth I think is this — that though most of [redacted] would not write except for money, [redacted] would not write any differently for [redacted] money.

All this is, in [redacted] sense, an apology for the book I [redacted] going to write during the coming, miserable weeks. It is to be [redacted] description of the way I spent last winter and, [redacted] the face of it, since there [redacted] [redacted] hairbreadth escapes, [redacted] romances, [redacted] discoveries, it seems presumptuous [redacted] suppose that I shall interest anyone. Who in his senses will read, still less buy, a travel book of [redacted] scientific value about a place he has no intention of visiting! (I make a present of that sentence to any ill-

intentioned reviewer.) Well, the ■■■■■ I see it, ■ that man is a communicative animal ; that probably there ■■ ■■ certain number of people who enjoy the same kind of things as I do, and that ■■ experience which for me ■■ worth six months of my time, ■ fair ■■■■■ of money and a great deal of exertion, may be worth ■ few hours' reading ■■ others. Just ■■ a carpenter, I suppose, seeing ■ piece of rough timber feels ■■ inclination to plane it and square it and put it into shape, ■■ ■ writer is not really content to leave any experience in the amorphous, haphazard condition in which life presents it ; and putting ■■ experience into shape means, for ■ writer, putting it into communicable form.

When anyone hears that a writer is going to do something that seems to them unusual, such as going to British Guiana, the invariable comment is, " I suppose you are going to collect material for a book," and since no one but a prig can take the trouble to be always explaining his motives, it is convenient to answer, " Yes," and leave it at that. But the truth is that self-respecting writers do not " collect material " for their books, ■■ rather that they do it all the time in living their lives. One does not travel, any more than ■■ falls in love, to collect material. It is simply part of one's life. Some writers have ■ devotion for rural England ; they settle in Sussex, identify themselves with the village, the farm, and the hedgerow and, inevitably, they write about it ; others ■■■■ into high society ; for myself and many better than me, there is a fascination in distant and barbarous places, and particularly in the borderlands of conflicting cultures and ■■■■ of development, where ideas, uprooted from their traditions, become oddly changed in transplantation. It is there that ■ find the

experiences vivid enough ■ demand translation into literary form.

So for the next month ■■■ I shall be reliving my journey in Guiana and Brazil. Not that it has ever been out of my memory. It has been there, ill digested, throughout ■ crowded and fretful summer, obtruding itself in ■ fragmentary way at incongruous moments. Now, in this seaside nursery, it will be all laid out, like the maps and photographs and drawings on the writing table, while falling leaves in the autumnal sunshine remind ■■ that it will soon be time to start out again somewhere else.

December, 1932.

Warm sun, calm water, a slight following wind; after a week of heavy seas it ■■ at last possible to write. Passengers, hitherto invisible, appeared from below and started playing deck games. There ■■ no band. The ship was small, old and slow, a cargo boat carrying a few passengers and not caring much about them. It ■■ not until the ■■ became smooth that ■■ ■■ how slow she was. A ■■■ comfortable ship would have necessitated transshipping at Trinidad.

The company was, presumably, typical of the route; three ■ four planters returning to the islands, men of old-fashioned appearance, thin brown faces and bulky watch-chains; two parsons, ■■ white, ■■ black, both affable; two English soaks doing the "round trip" for the good of their health, both surly when sober; some nondescript women of various colours rejoining husbands or visiting brothers; an agreeable English family ■ holiday, every day of their winter carefully planned in advance; ■ genteel young negress with purple lips;

■ somewhat cranky young man from the Phillipines who had an attachment for islands. Very few ■ going ■ far ■ Georgetown.

The first night of the voyage ■ as depressing ■ time ■ I have known in adult life. We sailed from London Docks. It was intensely cold; the heating apparatus ■ out of order and the bar ■ closed until ■ ■ ■ Most people have ■ to be sad when it actually comes ■ leaving. At dusk there was ■ boat drill; depressed, mutually suspicious passengers paraded in rows opposite ragged and shivering lascars; all round us colourless water and colourless Thames-side factories. That ■ the low spot of the journey; everything after it ■ ■ holiday.

For those of ■ who ■ good sailors, that is to say. From the time ■ got into the Channel until ■ day past the Azores, the boat rolled and wallowed extravagantly. There are many other disadvantages in rough weather besides sea-sickness; the noise is incessant; every movement becomes an exertion; it is difficult to sleep; the stewards become facetious. Rough weather performs the highly desirable function, however, of keeping the children quiet; for it is notorious that children, at sea in fine weather, are ■ of the traveller's most severe trials.

During the first ten days ■ began to read up a little ■ about the place I was going to. I could scarcely have known less to start with, and when people immediately before my departure asked, "But why British Guiana?" I ■ at difficulties to find ■ answer, except that ■ going *because* I knew ■ little; and also because it has always attracted ■ the map.

When I ■ at school there ■ no question of Geography being taught badly ■ not enough; it simply

■■■ taught ■■■ and arriving ■■ a History scholar ■■ Oxford I earned the immediate and implacable disapproval of my tutor through revealing that I did ■■ know which way the Rhine flowed. Since then I have picked up a little, but far less, ■ imagine, than ■ bright elementary schoolboy knows. I looked at the *Times* shipping ■■■ to-day and read that the *Bideford* had left Henjam and arrived at Basidu, the *Cumberland* ■■■ Beppu, the *Dauntless* at Ushuwaia, the *Fitzroy* ■■ Lerwick, the *Ladybird* at Kiukiang, and the *Scarborough* ■■ New Bedford, and reflected despondently that ■■■ of these places meant ■ thing ■ me. I am shaky about solstices and equinoxes. If required to explain how tides worked I should find myself in hopeless confusion. On the other hand I do greatly enjoy browsing over atlases, and for years the Guianas have fascinated me.

It always seemed odd that those three little gobs of empire should survive in the general explosion of South American self-government. Cayenne ■■ always in the news through its association with Devil's Island; Dutch Guiana conveyed nothing, but that is scarcely surprising since no normally educated Englishman knows anything about Dutch colonies; British Guiana seemed absurdly remote. One is always meeting Canadians and Australians; everyone has cousins in Kenya and Nigeria and Rhodesia, South Africans ■■■ to have controlled English life twenty-five years ago; people ■■ constantly going and coming ■ and from the Malay States and India; one way ■ another most of the Empire (and particularly Tristan da Cunha) ■■■ ■ one's notice ■■■ time; but I never remember hearing anything ■ all about Guiana.

Then I met ■ sailor who told ■■■ astonishing stories

about the natives of New Guinea, and, as I had listened inattentively ■ the first part of the conversation, that ■ ■ thinking about Guiana. By the time I discovered my mistake I had got interested in the place for other ■ ■ I bought ■ large map of it and found it all blanks and guesses; I found that ■ friend of mine had had an uncle there ■ ■ missionary; another had himself made a journey up ■ ■ of the rivers ■ Kaieteur Falls, ■ ■ of the finest, most inaccessible, and least advertised natural wonders of the world. I ■ ■ ■ else who had business interests all along the coast and spoke of ■ journey anywhere in the interior as ■ very reckless undertaking. I collected the few books that dealt with the country. And so gradually a vague, general idea began to take shape in my mind of a large empty territory stretching up three great rivers and their tributaries to shadowy, undefined boundaries; most of it was undeveloped and unsurveyed, large ■ ■ quite unexplored; except for ■ tract of grass land on the Brazilian frontier, and ■ inhabited fringe along the coast, it ■ ■ all forest ■ swamp; there ■ ■ ■ railway or road into the interior, the only ■ ■ of communication being by boat up rivers broken every few miles by rapids and falls; the coast population contained every conceivable race, chiefly Portuguese, negro and East Indian; the greater part of the colony had ■ permanent inhabitants, except shy little communities of aboriginal Indians; except on the ■ ■ there had been practically ■ European settlement and little enough there; and ■ few place-names, later ■ become real, stuck in my mind ■ words – Bartika, Wismar, Rupununi, Takutu.

There had been a constitution but finding it unworkable, they reverted ■ Crown Colony Government. The

coastal strip ■■■ much ■■■ any West Indian island slightly down ■ heel; the interior, virgin forest of the sort that stretches over half the continent. So much I had gathered from conversation and cursory reading. It ■■■ new country ■ ■■ and after alternating panics that it would prove impossibly arduous ■ impossibly dull, I abandoned the other winter projects that had been floating vaguely in my mind – the Solomon Islands, fox-hunting, carpentry classes, Iraq and Mexico – and took my ticket to Georgetown, with ■■■ small suitcases, ■ camera, ■ letter of credit and no clear plan of what my procedure would be when I arrived.

My fellow passengers from Georgetown were ■■■ encouraging. They ■■■ mildly excited at first when they learned that anyone who wrote books ■■■ coming ■■■ their country, and with that pathetic belief in the might of the pen which one continually meets in out of the way places, hoped that I should persuade the Imperial Government to "do something" about local trade conditions. The country was stiff with gold and diamonds, they said, which only needed "development." When I told them that I wanted to go up country, they lost interest. Of ■■■ there ■■■ always Kaieteur, they said, quite a lot of tourists went there; three ■ four a year; they believed it was very pretty when you got there but it ■■■ ■ great deal and you might be drowned ■ get fever; ■ there was the Rupununi savannah; several white people lived there and ■■■ ■ white woman, but it cost ■ great deal to get there and you might be drowned on the way ■ get fever; besides it ■■■ only ■■■ certain seasons you could get there at all. I had far better winter in Trinidad, they said, where there ■■■ ■■■ excellent new country club, horse races and a lot of

money about or ■ Barbadoes where the bathing ■ unrivalled.

And ■ be honest I did gaze rather wistfully ■ each of the islands in turn disappeared behind us. The first ■ Antigua and, coming on it ■ ■ did after twelve days of unbroken horizons, it remains the ■ vivid and ■ glamorous. Not that there was anything particularly remarkable about it—steep little hills covered in bush, ■ fringe of palm along the beach, brilliant blue water revealing, fathoms down, the silver sand of its bed; ■ old fort covering the bay; a shabby little ■ of wooden, balconied houses, its only prominent building ■ large plain Cathedral rebuilt after ■ earthquake, with shining towers and a good pitch-pine interior; inquisitive black urchins in the street; women in absurd sun hats, the brims drooping and flapping over their black faces, waddling along on flat feet; ragged negroes lounging aimlessly at corners; baskets of highly coloured fish for sale—purple and scarlet like markings of ■ mandril; ramshackle motor cars; and in the churchyard the memorials of ■ lost culture—the rococo marble tombs of forgotten sugar planters, carved in England and imported by sailing ship in the golden days of West Indian prosperity.

It is significant that marble, that ■ grand and delicate of all building material, the substance of almost all sculpture, has to-day become the symbol of the vulgar and garish—the profiteers of *Punch* circa 1920, Lyons Corner House and the Victor Emanuel Memorial; it is part of the flight from magnificence ■ which both the "ye-olde"-pewter-and-sampler aesthetic and its ■ recent counterpart, the "modern"-concrete-and-steel-tube have given impetus. A broken column in ■

Syrian desert, an incised [redacted] overwhelmed in [redacted] gross vegetation of the South American bush remain [redacted] spoors of something gracious that passed that way centuries before. [redacted] thought how delightful it would be [redacted] make [redacted] study of the trade in marble and [redacted] stones, tracing the [redacted] round the Mediterranean cities of the porphyry galleys from the hottest quarries in the world [redacted] the Red Sea coast; [redacted] trade so active that practically [redacted] porphyry has been quarried since and all the pedestals and urns of Napoleonic bric-a-brac were made, [redacted] I [redacted] told, of stone cut in the time of Caligula. But this is the kind of thing [redacted] thinks about only when [redacted] is travelling; all the time that I [redacted] abroad I make [redacted] lutions to study one thing or another when I get back — Portuguese, map-making, photography; nothing ever comes of it. Perhaps it is a good thing to preserve one's ignorance for old age.

We stopped only a day [redacted] Antigua to put down passengers and cargo; one of the things [redacted] brought to the islands [redacted] holly for their Christmas decorations. It looked odd being tossed down into the lighters under [redacted] blazing sky, [redacted] completely dissociated from its traditional concomitants of Yule logs and whisky punch and Santa Claus stamping off the [redacted]. But it [redacted] not my first Christmas in the tropics; I knew it all — the cablegram forms specially decorated with berries and robins, the puzzled native children before the crib in the Church, "auld lang syne" [redacted] the gramophone, the beggars trotting hopefully behind one in the street saying "Happy Clistmas — me velly Clistian boy"; the prospect of hot plum pudding on [redacted] windless, steaming evening. But everyone [redacted] the world [redacted] has something [redacted] be melancholy about [redacted] Christmas, not [redacted] account

of their being anything intrinsically depressing about the feast but because it █ an anniversary █ easily memorable; one can cast back one's mind and remember where one was, and in what company, every year from the present █ one's childhood.

For the last week of the voyage the life of the ship disintegrated. Most of the day █ were on land; the decks █ crowded with agents; passengers disappeared and █ arrived █ short journeys between the islands; even the soaks in the bar once got █ far as the nearest hotel ashore. I should like to write about the islands, particularly Barbadoes with its castellated churches, "poor white" descendants of Monmouth's army, its excellent ghost story and over-rated cooking – but there is █ reason why I should not. My brother Alec is also fond of travelling and like me, poor fish, he lives by writing books, █ on one of our rare but agreeable meetings █ made █ compact each to keep off the other's territory; with a papal gesture he made █ a present of the whole of Africa and a good slice of Asia in exchange for the Polynesian Islands, North America and the West Indies. When he saw in █ newspaper that I █ going to Guiana he sent █ █ sharp note claiming that the West Indies included any places █ the mainland of West Indian character – i.e., sugar estates, slaves, █ and pirates – and recommending British Honduras. We compromised on my promising to get up country █ soon █ █ could and █ pay █ little attention █ possible to what I passed on the way. It is █ odd thing about my brother and █ that though █ scarcely █ meet each other in England and █ █ share none of the █ friends, I often █ upon his tracks abroad. This occurred in Trinidad in quite █ startling way.

I was sitting, an hour or so after our arrival, on the verandah of the principal hotel, talking ■ some acquaint-
 ■■■ I had picked up.

It seemed to ■ ■ good hotel; there ■■ plenty of coming and going and ■ constant fanfare of motor horns, ■■ ■■ competed to take your hat and did ■■ give you ■ number, ■ blackboard announced the local sailings, there ■■ ■ stall selling American illustrated magazines ■ ■ greatly enhanced price, drinks ■■ extremely expensive, there ■■ ■■ ■■ doing nothing and half the tables were occupied by lonely and fretful men waiting for people who had not turned up; it had in fact all the characteristics — whether you like them ■ not is a different matter — that the rough and tumble of life has taught one to associate with ■ good hotel.

We had ■ round or ■■ of swizzles and then one of my ■■ friends said, "I say, your name is mud in this joint."

"It stinks," said the other.

Now ■■ may or may not be used to this sort of thing by the end of one's stay in a place, but this seemed ■■ early days for anyone to have taken against me; it sounded like ■■ prejudice; ■ I asked the ■■

"Well, that book you wrote," he said, "laying into this hotel. I don't say you ■■ wrong, but you ■■ hardly expect them to like it here."

Then I remembered that in one of his books my brother had dealt at some length with the discomforts he had suffered in an hotel in Trinidad. Apparently this busy place where ■■ were sitting ■■ the original of his "Baracuta." There had been ■ legal action about it, ■■ against ■■ but against ■ member of the local parliament who ■■ quoted him. And while this

was being explained to me, a message arrived that the manager had heard I was in the hotel and was coming to talk to me. A difficult moment.

"He's quite a decent chap," my companions explained, "except when he gets roused."

"Here he comes."

A stocky, neat man, not, as it happened, unlike my brother, was approaching in a purposeful way. "Good evening, Mr. Waugh," he said. "I heard you were here. Boy, take an order for drinks," and then turning with what I took to be an ugly glint in his eye he said, "I hope you like my hotel better than your brother did."

We had a drink and talked uncomfortably about my destination in Guiana. There was clearly going to be no chucking out, but there was still the glint in the manager's eye.

Presently I said, "I hope Alec's book didn't cause you much trouble."

"Trouble. I got two hundred and fifty quid damages for it. I could do with some more trouble like that. Boy, take an order for drinks." Then I realised that the glint was far from menacing. We had a couple of drinks and he made me a member of his country club. Finally he said, "Look here, I feel I owe your family something for the good turn your brother did me. Why go back to the ship? They'll be taking your cargo all night and it'll be as noisy as hell. Stay here as my guest."

I murmured that I had brought my luggage ashore.

"That's all right. I'll fix you up."

So that night after a heavy evening at the country club - which was all stiff shirts and white waistcoats and saxophones and as urban as the Embassy - I went back to a large suite in the "Baracuta" and found put out

for me ■■■ pyjamas, ■ dressing gown gayer ■■■ I should have dared choose for myself, ■ ■■■ toothbrush, and ■ ■■■ begging ■■■ call for anything else I needed. An exemplary ■■■ in which ■ accept criticism.

Blue water ends ■ Trinidad; there and from there onwards the sea is murky; opaque, dingy stuff the colour of shabby stucco, thick with mud sweeping down from the great continental rivers – the Orinoco, the Essequibo, the Demerara, the Berbice, the Courantyne; all along the coast their huge mouths gape amidst dune and mangrove, pouring out into the blue Caribbean the waters of the remote highlands. Later I was to tramp across part of the great continental divide, where the tributaries of the Amazon and Essequibo dovetail into one another, tiny cascading brooks, confusing in an unmapped country because they seemed always to be flowing in the direction one did not expect; I was to wade through them or scramble over them ■ slippery tree-trunks in the forest where they ■■■ ruby clear, wine-coloured from the crimson timber; I ■■■ to paddle tedious days down them when they had become deep and black; leaving them months later, ■ I saw the water become blue and clear again I ■■■ to feel touched with regret, for they had become for ■ time part of my life. But ■■■ as ■■■ approached the mainland I only felt mildly depressed that bathing had ceased to be attractive.

Depression deepened as rain set in; ■ monotonous tropical downpour, always dreary, most monotonous and most depressing when ■■■ is ■ the water. We ■■■ already ■ day late and now we missed the tide by ■ hour and had to lie ■ anchor in the rain and ■ slight fog, waiting to ■■■ the bar into Demerara. There ■■■ ■

lightship faintly visible ■ mile ■ so away. They told me without pride that it was ■ ■ ■ There were ■ only ■ handful of passengers left, all pretty impatient ■ the delay.

Next day, before noon, we arrived. There ■ nothing to ■ The town lies at the mouth of the Demerara ■ the right bank; opposite ■ low, green mangrove swamps. Half ■ dozen small ships lay alongside the quay. We steamed up and then drifted down ■ ■ berth with the current. Low wooden sheds and low roofs beyond them; everything quite flat; rain streamed down ceaselessly. I have never ■ a less attractive harbour; hope dried up in one at the sight of it; only the heavy reek of sugar occupied the ■

Landing ■ simple. There was none of the jaunty cross-examination which usually greets ■ British subject when he arrives on British territory; an elderly negro in a straw hat glanced at our passports; the Customs officers opened nothing; we passed through the sheds, which were full of bees attracted to the sugar bags, and out into the water-logged street; ■ taxi splashed and skidded to the hotel; the windows ■ obscured by rain.

A bare bedroom with white wooden walls, ■ large bed with mosquito netting, a rocking chair, ■ faint smell of "Flit." There I was.

People sometimes ask me, no doubt by way of polite- ■ and to make conversation, "But when you arrive alone ■ these out-of-the-way places, what do you *do*? I ■ how do you *start*?" Well, apart from its conversational value in keeping one going another ten minutes, that is ■ good question and I have often wondered if there is ■ satisfactory ■ On this particular occasion

the first thing I did was to change my hotel. Not that there was anything wrong with the one that had been chosen for me, in the sense that Alec found things wrong with his "Baracuta." Residents considered it the best in the town. The man with business interests mentioned before had booked me a room there; it was clean and quiet and select and full in the sea breeze, but it simply would not do. I have picked up enough about travelling to know that when one arrives in a strange town the thing one needs is a very noisy and busy hotel, with people from out of town popping into the bar for drinks and elderly men telling stories until late into the night. There was a place like that in Georgetown and I got into it that afternoon. It was kept by a dashing, handsome fellow with a military title, half Irish and half Portuguese, with a fine swagger and plenty of talk. There I removed my luggage to a bare bedroom with white wooden walls, a large bed with mosquito netting, a rocking chair and a faint smell of "Flit," and felt comforted by the change.

Two coloured reporters arrived from local newspapers to interview me. They had followed me on bicycles from the other hotel. (This, let me hasten to say, is an indication of fame. All first-class passengers are given column interviews on arrival in Georgetown.) They looked rather damp and had none of the breezy technique of their trade. They took down all I said laboriously though I was a witness at an Archbishop's Court.

Was it that that I was a writer? Yes.

A writer who had published books was just a writer? I told them that I did write books but that I had also been a reporter for three weeks on the *Daily Express*. The London *Express*? That clearly impressed them, confirming what I have always maintained, that

fools ■■■ get ■ book published but it takes ■ particular ■■■ of fool to hold down ■ job ■ ■ daily paper.

Was I going to write about Guiana? One of them had ■ cutting from a London paper in which I had facetiously said that I understood the beetles in Guiana ■■■ ■ big ■ pigeons and that one killed them with shot-guns. Had I really come to shoot beetles, they asked. They ■■■ afraid I should be disappointed. The beetles ■■■ certainly remarkably large, but ■■■ as large as that.

Had I any views about the mineral ■■■■■ of the country? When I confessed that I had not, they ■■■ clearly nonplussed; this was their stock, foolproof question, because most visitors to Georgetown ■■■ there with some idea of prospecting for diamonds or gold. They gazed at me with reproach. I volunteered the information that I was going up country.

"Ah, to Kaieteur?"

I then inwardly took the vow which I very nearly kept, that I would in no circumstances visit that very famous waterfall. I told them that my route ■■■ ■ far uncertain but that I hoped to travel up into Brazil and out by the Amazon. They took it all down but they looked incredulous. Then they shut up their notebooks and wished me ■ happy journey. They knew better than ■■■ I ■■■ going to Kaieteur all right.

So I ■■■ left to tackle the old problem of getting through the afternoon, which, ■■■ ■ the problem of getting through the morning, is ■■■ of the hardest ■ lonely ■■■ ■ set himself.

There was nothing particular to do; there ■■■ is ■ occasions of this kind, so I did what ■■■ always does. I ■■■ my ■■■ in the book ■ Government House,

presented my only letter of introduction (the recipient was away; they always are), sent off ■■■■ affectionate cablegrams (decorated with holly and robins this time and ■■ reduced rate, in honour of Christmas) and, since the rain had stopped, set out ■ foot ■ see the town.

Perhaps it ■■ the ■■■■ Georgetown, so like that of ■■ Irish country house, that made me expect something different. Anyway for no better reason that I ■■ think of, I had pictured the place small and solid like the town at St. Helena. Instead it ■■ all made of wood and very large; large in the tiresome ■■■■ that everything ■■■■ long way from everything else. The main streets ■■■■ very broad, with grass and trees down the centre, and the houses all "stood in their own grounds." The shops were large departmental stores and seemed all to be called either Booker's or Foggarty's; the club, for which I had found ■ temporary membership card awaiting me, was ■ vast barn entirely empty. The Museum took some finding; it was ■ upper floor smelling of must and containing a few ■■■■ of Indian work, ■■■■ faded photographs and the worst stuffed animals I have seen anywhere. There ■■ a large Catholic Cathedral, concrete and unfinished, and numerous timber churches in the box-of-bricks style of architecture. The people seemed all black ■ brown; the black noisy and shabby, the brown subdued and natty. There had ■■■■ been trams but they had ceased working. That at first sight ■■■■ Georgetown.*

Subsequent closer acquaintance could not improve

* Doubtless some local patriot will complain that I give a wrong impression; that there is a cricket club, a golf club, a promenade along the sea front and a spacious botanical gardens. That is all true. I have nothing against the amenities of the place. Just the reverse, that it is disappointing to travel a long way and find at the end of one's journey, a well-laid-out garden city.

the architecture but it revealed ■ number of very likeable qualities in the life of the place. Acknowledgements of kindness received tend ■ make rather tedious reading but it would be churlish to omit any reference ■ the cordiality and help which I encountered from every kind of person in British Guiana; much of this will, I hope, be apparent in the ensuing narrative; ■ thing I would like to remark on particularly. It is delightful but not uncommon ■ receive some hospitality from British officials abroad; it is because His Excellency the Governor and Lady Denham extended to ■ ■ much more than the formal courtesies of their position, that I should like to offer them here my explicit and especial thanks.

It was December 22nd when I landed, and January 3rd when I left for the interior. Most of this time, with the exception of three delightful days spent in the Governor's launch on an expedition up the Essequibo mouth to Mazaruni station, was spent in trying to make some sort of plans for the future. Christmas ■ both ■ good and ■ bad time for this purpose; good because most of the people from up country had ■ down to town for the celebrations; bad because they took the holidays seriously in Georgetown and most of the shops and offices were shut most of the time. Most of my information came casually from conversation in the hotel bar; indeed so much of one's help ■ in that way that I wonder how teetotallers ever get about at all.

Gradually I picked up ■ of the vocabulary of the place and since I shall be using it in future, it will be as well ■ give ■ explanation. First ■ to the ■ In East Africa people are divided into Europeans,

Indians and natives. In Guiana the word "native" is never used. The aboriginal Indians are called Indians or "bucks." The Indians, that is to say the descendants of the indentured immigrants from India, are called East Indians; there are great numbers of these, mostly in agricultural village communities along the coast; then there are the negro and mulatto descendants of emancipated slaves who are usually spoken of as blacks and coloured people. I never heard "nigger" used except familiarly by a black to another. Creole is used of anybody, black, coloured or white, born in the West Indies, and also of animals bred there. Then there are the whites, who in Guiana are practically all temporary inhabitants, officials and business men on a job; there is no white Creole aristocracy such as one finds in the islands. The English are, I should say, a minority even among the whites, who come from every country in Europe but chiefly from Portugal via Madeira. In the census returns a column is headed "European or Portuguese," a distinction not particularly relished by the Portuguese; they have most of the money in the country, but there are extremely few people in Guiana who are at all rich by European standards.

There are other words peculiar to the colony, many of Dutch or Indian origin; a landing-stage is a "steling," a fallen tree, a "tacuba"; a stream, a "creek"; a bush path, a "line"; "bush" is used for forest in other parts of the world (I never heard "jungle" used); open country is "savannah"; the broad chopping knives used for clearing the lines are called cutlasses; puma and jaguar are called "tigers"; a halfpenny is a "cent" and fourpence a "bit" (this is due to the tiresome currency calculated in dollars and usually

worked in pounds and shillings); ■■■■ curious word of all ■■■■ that for the blacks who go in little unorganised parties up the rivers to prospect for alluvial gold ■■■■ diamonds; they ■■■■ called "pork knockers" because, it is said, when they ■■■■ in funds they come into the stores and knock ■■■■ the counter demanding pork (but this ■■■■ ■■■■ unsatisfactory ■■■■ most etymological derivations).

Few of the people I talked to had even the most cursory acquaintance with the bush, though ■■■■ of them could name ■■■■ who ■■■■ time or another had been up to Kaieteur; they were mostly discouraging and, like the books I had read coming out, for quite contradictory reasons; half regarding the expedition as ■■■■ mild and rather tedious picnic and half ■■■■ ■■■■ precipitate and painful suicide. There is always the conviction at the back of people's minds in this part of the world that no stranger can be up to much good, so in order to dispel the suspicion that I was after diamonds, I gave it out, ■■■■ ■■■■ indeed the truth, that I wanted to take photographs of the primitive Indians. Here again they ■■■■ discouraging. "You'll find them all playing gramophones and working sewing-machines. They're all civilised now. We know what you want," they said with winks, "you want ■■■■ take the girls naked. Well, your best plan is to go up to Bartika and get ■■■■ few of the tarts there ■■■■ pose for you. You ■■■■ get the proper feather ornaments from the Self Help shop. That's what most of the American scientific expeditions do." Across the Brazilian border I might find something to interest me, but not in Guiana, they said.

I later enquired in more responsible quarters and learned that this was far from being the truth; one whole

tribe the Wei-Weis still live in absolute seclusion, though the difficulties of reaching these alone insuperable, but I was to find later among the Wapishianas, Patashians and Machusis, people with only the superficial contact with civilisation. But it was all a little discouraging and I realised that though people were anxious enough to help, they could do nothing until I told them what I wanted. I could not just say I wanted interesting things because they had no idea what would interest me. It was up to me to fix a destination and they would tell me how to get there. I had a note of introduction to a Jesuit missionary on the Takutu River and from what I had heard in London about the circumstances of his life, it sounded good enough. There were three Takutu Rivers marked on my map, but two were merely guesses, sketched in tentatively with dotted lines, while the third was marked firmly in a place of known importance, so I assumed, correctly as it turned out, that this was the one I wanted. It was through the furthest extremity of the Rupununi savannah forming the boundary between British Guiana and Brazil. Accordingly I made this my objective.

Something should here be said about the history of the Rupununi. It is the only considerable piece of open country in the colony, cut off from the coast by forest and forming, geographically, a part of the big plain which stretches into Brazil beyond the Rio Branco. It was first visited by the explorer Schomburgh in the middle of the last century, claimed vaguely for the British Government with other tracts later ceded to our neighbours, and then left in oblivion until it was rediscovered by a highly romantic character named Mr. Melville. This gentleman, who died a few years back, was a parson's

son from Jamaica. His story, as told me by one of his daughters, that after various unsuccessful attempts at gold washing he was found by some Wapishiana Indians dying of fever in the upper Essequibo. He expressed a desire to die in open country and they accordingly carried him to the Rupununi savannah where he made immediate recovery. The Indians at that time had no trade connection at all with the coast. Melville began bartering in a small way, taking down a yearly boat to Georgetown loaded with hammocks and other examples of Indian workmanship and bringing back fish hooks, beads, patent medicines and other desirable commodities. He won the Indians' confidence, married among them, and presently began keeping cattle on a gradually increasing scale until by 1914 he was living in patriarchal authority at a large ranch named Dadanawa.

There was at this time no connection with the coast except by boat down the Essequibo, a journey always arduous, often dangerous and sometimes impossible. His cattle were all sold over the border into Brazil and the country was to all appearance Brazilian; the few other ranchers were Brazilian, Portuguese or the language, there was no representative of government except Melville himself who had been presented with the title of magistrate; there was no attempt to collect customs duties on the trade across the Takutu.

Then with the outbreak of influenza a sudden demand for beef. It became necessary to find a way for the Rupununi cattle to reach the Georgetown market. It is impossible to navigate the Essequibo with large boats; the long-debated railway to the interior was no nearer being begun; accordingly it was decided to cut a trail

down the already existing Indian line from the beginning of the bush ■ Anai, to the highest navigable point, Takama, on the Berbice River. The ■ ran ■ countless deep creeks; there was ■ question of making a road for wheeled vehicles but simply ■ track down which the beasts could be got alive and fattened up again ■ pasture on the coast. There were numerous, serious objections ■ the plan, notably the immense leakage through animals accustomed ■ the savannah, stampeding into the bush from which they could never be recovered, and also through their dying of exhaustion and lack of food on the ten days' drive. However Melville sold ■ his whole interests while the scheme was still popular and handed over his huge territory to a newly formed Rupununi Development Company which has carried on a precarious existence ever since. Meanwhile Melville's family still hold complete predominance in the district, all the key positions being held by his sons and sons-in-law.

The cattle trail is ■ of the chief grumbles of the colony; that and the ■ road which the present Government is constructing from Bartika to Kaieteur, presumably because these ■ its chief recent activities and bar politics all over the world consist of grumbling ■ the Government. In most dependencies I have found that the Public Works Department ■ the chief butt of conversation; in Guiana it was always the Lands and Mines.

As ■ ■ I decided to make for Takutu I ■ advised ■ ■ and see Bain, the Commissioner for the district, who by good chance was in Georgetown for Christmas. So with ■ Governor's introduction I sought him ■ in the boarding-house where ■ was staying. He ■ a

middle-aged, emaciated man, creole with some Indian blood. Like everyone else in the colony he had ■■■ time worked gold and diamonds; like ■■■ other people he had also been ■ surveyor, ■ soldier, ■ policeman and ■ magistrate; he had lately returned to the last avocation which included most of the other functions. He received ■■■ with great kindness and vivacity, telling me that the Rupununi ■■■ the most beautiful place in the world and that anyone with ■ gift for expression should be able to make a book about it. He ■■■ himself returning in ■ day or two by the cattle trail ■ far ■ Kurupukari which was well on my way. He had ■ boat of stores leaving almost at once from Bartika which he expected to find awaiting him. He offered ■■■ a place in that.

"It ought to get there before me," he said. "I do not know about the rains. Perhaps it will take four days, perhaps eight. But it must get there because it is full of barbed wire I need. Unless of course it's wrecked," he added. "Mr. Winter's boat ■■■ totally destroyed in the rapids the day before yesterday."

I had no idea where Kurupukari was, but it sounded as good ■ anywhere else. When I got back I looked for it ■ the map. Mr. Bain had spoken very quickly ■ that when I found Yupukarri right up ■ the savannah I ■■■ highly delighted. It ■■■ not for two days that I found Kurupukari about a hundred miles away from it. Then I realised that I was in for a longer journey than I had anticipated, and trebled my order for stores.

These were ■ difficulty, partly because, under the present arrangement, I was ■ leave before the end of the New Year holidays which meant that I had only

one day in which I get everything, but chiefly because I had no idea what I should need. Again opinion was contradictory, some people saying, "Just take a gun and live by that," and others, "Don't count on getting anything up country. The ranchers live on farine."

I had no idea what farine was but I felt I should need something else. Mr. Bain simply said, "You should be like me. I can go for days without eating – like a camel. That is the way to live in the bush."

I had already begun to guess that travelling in this empty country was going to be very different from Africa where labour is almost unlimited. It was not for luxurious "chop boxes" of varied delicacies. I realised that moving stores from place to place was going to be a problem – how great a problem I did not know until later. So I concentrated on necessities – flour, sugar, corn beef, potatoes, rum and I on – bought hammock, gun, mosquito net and blanket, delivered them to the firm who was organising Mr. Bain's boat and settled down to enjoy the last two days in Georgetown.

From that moment onwards I did not have an hour's certainty of plan. It was arranged that I should take Tuesday's steamer the Bartika and start in the boat on Wednesday; then I discovered by chance that there was no steamer on Tuesdays; wires were broken and the boat delayed until Thursday.

Then Mr. Bain rang up to say he was sending a black policeman with me who was to act as my servant; that sounded all right until the agents rang up to say that the policeman was coming there would only be ten for twenty lbs. of my stores. There was nothing I could do except countermand threequarters of them.

Then the agents rang up to say, did I realise that it was an open boat and that since the rains were on it was imperative to take a tarpaulin. Desperate and unsuccessful attempts to get a tarpaulin with every shop in Georgetown closed.

Then Mr. Bain rang up to say that the agents said it was an open boat and that the rains were on. I should be soaked to the skin every day and undoubtedly get fever and he could not take the responsibility of sending me in it.

Then I went to see Mr. Bain and he said I had better go with Takama with him and perhaps there would be a horse to get to Kurupukari.

Then I rang up the agents and said that since the boat was relieved of my weight they were to put all my things on board.

Then Mr. Bain rang up to say that he had come to the conclusion that I could have the horse which he had meant to pack with his personal stores; instead he would send them by boat.

Then I rang up the agents and said they were to take from my stores the weight equivalent to the personal stores Mr. Bain was sending by boat.

All these, and other less remarkable alarms, occurred at intervals of two or three hours. I may also note that for each telephone call successfully put through there were five or six failures; that I left the hotel for an hour without finding messages on my return I rang up Mr. Bain and the agent urgently; that whenever I rang them up they had just gone out; and that on the last day I was lying in severe pain, poisoned with a local delicacy called "crab-back" and imagining that I had cholera. Taken all in all it was a disturbed departure.

There was plenty going on in Georgetown that week.

An unknown Dutchman shot himself ■ Christmas morning in his ■ ■ the rival hotel, on account of feeling lonely.

A gentleman known to his friends as "the Blood of Corruption" ■ arrested ■ ■ charges. He was the leader of ■ criminal organisation called "the Beasts of Berlin." They had taken the ■ from ■ cinema film; none of them had the remotest idea what Berlin was; they just liked the ■ But they were perfectly serious criminals for all that.

There ■ ■ race-meeting in heavy rain and, on New Year's Eve, a large number of dances. At my hotel there ■ a Caledonian Ball, characterised by ■ marked male predominance, pipers, and quite elderly men sitting giggling on the ballroom floor; there was also ■ more decorous function at the club where I ate the poisoned "crab-back." There were several "swizzle parties," an institution which dates from long before the North American cocktail party, starts at six and goes ■ till midnight. There ■ a negro masquerade — an unorganised and ■ ■ less spontaneous exhibition of joviality; the gayer spirits dressed up in comic fancy dress and clowned about in Camp Street, each followed by ■ small court of admirers. There ■ said to be a "Komfa" dance (I do ■ know if that is the right spelling). These dances, the direct descendants of the African "Ngoma," still take place from time to time along the coast in out-of-the-way bits of waste ground, usually ■ the full moon; they ■ illegal for they usually conclude with an orgy and are apparently associated with voodooism. A young engineer whom I had ■ on ■ boat, had ■ of one from ■ of his workmen.

We drove about in search of it for the greater part of one evening but failed to locate it.

Through all this the preparations for the journey up country, the buying of chlorodyne and bandages, gun caps and cartridge cases, flour and kerosene, seemed fantastic and unsubstantial, and the empty forest, a few miles away, infinitely remote, ■ unrelated to the crowded ■ of the coast as it was ■ London. Most journeys, I think, begin and all end with a ■ of unreality. Even when eventually I found myself in the train for New Amsterdam, sitting opposite Mr. Bain, with ■ improbable baggage piled up round us, it still required ■ effort to convince me that we ■ on our way.

CHAPTER II

Mr. Bain's conversation—New Amsterdam—the Berbice—Mr. Bain's solicitude—Yetto at a party—the savannah—Mr. Bain's missing links—the bush—a snake—Kurupukari—farine and —arrival of —

It is said that the railway along the Guiana coast is the oldest in the Empire. It runs in pretty, flat country over creeks and canals and through gay, ramshackle villages. The stations still bear the of the old sugar estates but these are mostly split up into small holdings growing coco-nut and rice. The further one goes from Georgetown towards New Amsterdam, the blacker become the inhabitants, of purer negro type and more cheerful manners. Berbice men look Demerarans as wasters; the Demerarans look on them as bumpkins.

It was just dark by the time Mr. Bain and I reached New Amsterdam. We had the carriage to ourselves and our baggage. Most of the way Mr. Bain talked.

I do not know how the legend originated that the who administer distant territories "strong and silent." It is all against the testimony of observed fact. Some may start strong and even retain a certain wiriness into middle life, but most of them, by the time they have attained any eminence in the King Emperor's service, subject to more complaints. As for their silence, it vary in exact inverse ratio to their distance from civilisation. For silence

the pie-faced young diners-out of London ; in the wide open spaces are, in my experience, wildly garrulous ; many of them, I have noticed, contract the habit of talking themselves dogs and natives, equally ignorant of their language. What is more, they will talk all subjects — highly personal reminiscences, their dreams, diet and digestion, science, history, morals and theology. But pre-eminently of theology. It to be the obsession waiting round the for all lonely . You start talking bawdy with breezy, rum-drinking tramp skipper and in ten minutes he is proving disproving the doctrine of original sin.

Mr. Bain, though indefatigable in his duty, not strong ; frequent attacks of fever had left him bloodless and fleshless, and besides this he suffered from constant, appalling bouts of asthma which kept him awake for all but an hour or two every night. Nor was he silent. During the stimulating fortnight I was to spend in his company he talked at large every conceivable topic, eagerly, confidently, enthusiastically, not always accurately, sometimes scarcely coherently, inexhaustibly ; with inspired imagination, with dizzy changes of thought and rather alarming theatrical effects, in a vocabulary oddly compounded of the jargon he accustomed to use among his subordinates and the longer, less habitual words he had noticed in print. As I have said he talked of everything one time another, but mostly either in metaphysical speculation or in anecdote. He himself always figured prominently in the latter and it in these that his gestures became most dramatic. The dialogue all in *oratio recta* ; never " I ordered him to go once," but " I say him, ' Go ! plenty quick, quick. Go ! ' " and the words Mr. Bain's finger

would shoot ■■■ accusingly, ■■■ body would ■■■ and quiver, his eyes would blaze until ■ began ■ fear ■ would induce some kind of seizure.

One engaging and lamentably ■■■ trait in Mr. Bain's reminiscences was this, that besides, like half the world, remembering and retailing ■ the injustices he had encountered, he also remembered and retained every word of approbation; the affection he had received from his parents ■ ■ boy; the prize given him at school for his geometry; the high commendation he had had ■ the technical college for his draughtsmanship; numberless spontaneous expressions of ■■■ from various acquaintances throughout his life; the devotion of subordinates and the confidence of superiors; the pleasure the Governor took in his official reports; testimonies from delinquents to the impartiality, mercy, and wisdom of his judicial sentences—all these were fresh and glowing in his memory and all ■ nearly all, I ■ privileged to hear.

Many of his stories I found to strain the normal limits of credulity—such as that he had a horse which swam under water and a guide who employed ■ parrot to bring him information; the bird would fly ■ ahead, said Mr. Bain, and coming back to its perch on the Indian's shoulder whisper in his ■■ what he had seen, who ■■ the road and where they could find water. I do not think that there ■■ any conscious effort to deceive. I think that like many ■■■ he drew ■ clear distinction between what had actually occurred and what he had told ■ fair number of times ■ ■ good story. But ■■■ people dislike the idea that they ■■ having their legs pulled and I ■■■ into what ■■ seems ■ ■ an ungenerous and exasperating habit of cross-examination,

which usually disinterred some closely concealed nucleus of verbal truth.

At sundown it became cold and clammy in the carriage; clouds of mosquitoes came in from windows and corridor, biting me to frenzy. Mr. Bain remarked gloomily that they were probably all infected with malaria. Everyone has different theories about quinine; Mr. Bain recommended constant, large doses, observing parenthetically that they caused deafness, insomnia and impotence.

We transferred from the train to a ferry steamer and drifted rather disconsolately across to the town. There was a boarding-house kept by a white gentleman in reduced circumstances; here we dined in a room full of mosquitoes; the house had run out of drink during the New Year celebrations. After dinner to avoid the mosquitoes we walked about the streets for an hour. They were empty and ill-lit. New Amsterdam, eighty years ago, was a prosperous, if sleepy, town with a club and its sports society; now there is barely a handful of whites quartered there, the rest having been driven out by mosquitoes and the decay of the sugar trade. At a street corner we met a Jordanite haranguing a few apathetic loafers and a single suspicious policeman. He wore a long white robe and a white turban and he waved a wand of metal tubing; a drowsy little boy sat beside him holding a large Bible. The Jordanites are one of the many queer sects that flourish among negroes. They derive their name not as might be supposed from the river, but from a recently deceased Mr. Jordan from Jamaica; their object seemed partially pious, partially political; they were said to favour polygamy. The present speaker ran round in little circles as he spoke, "What for you black men afraid ob de white man?"

Why you ascaired ob his pale face and blue eye? Why do you fear his yellow hair? Because you all fornicators—dat is de reason. If you were pure of heart you need fear de white man."

Then he saw and seemed rather embarrassed. "'Nother boy." But the boy asleep the Bible. He cracked him sharply on the head with his wand and the child hastily read of Ezekiel and the preacher took up another subject.

"The black man got a very inferior complex," remarked Mr. Bain we resumed walk.

Next day we started at dawn. There a great rainbow over the town. On the way to the quay I noticed a charming old Lutheran Church, relic of the Dutch occupation, that had been invisible the night before.

A lazy, uneventful day in the paddle steamer up the Berbice River. Monotonous vegetable walls on either bank, occasionally broken by bovianders' cabins.* Now and then an unstable, dug-out would shoot out from the green shadows and an unkempt, bearded figure would deliver a parcel of mail. We slung our hammocks on deck. There a steward who made gin-swizzles of a kind and served revolting meals at intervals of two hours. On the whole a tolerable day's journey.

Our only companions on the top deck a Belgian rancher, his Indian wife, some of their children, and his wife's sister. They the first Indians I had

* Boviander is the name given to the people of unpredictable descent—mostly Dutch, Indian and negro mixtures—who live in isolated huts all along the lower waters of the big rivers; they generally have a minute clearing where they grow manioc or maize; they fish, and spend most of their time, like the water rat in *the Willows* "messing about in boats."

Since they had taken up ■■■ a European they wore hats and stockings and high-heeled shoes, but they ■■■ very shy, guarding their eyes like nuns, and giggling foolishly when spoken to; they had squat little figures and blank, mongol faces. They had bought a gramophone and a few records in ■■■ which kept them happy for the twelve hours ■■■ together. Conversation was all between Mr. Bain and the rancher, and mostly about horses. I ■■■ approach any ■■■ horse (and few familiar ■■■ for that matter) without ■■■ sinking in self-esteem, ■■■ I listened with more than polite interest. Quite different standards of quality seemed to be observed here from those I used to learn from Captain Hance.

"I tell you, Mr. Bain, that buckskin of mine ■■■ the finest mare bred in this district. You didn't have to ■■■ no spur or whip to her. Why before you was on her back, almost, she ■■■ off like the wind and *nothing* would stop her. And if she didn't want to go any particular way *nothing* would make her. Why I've been carried six miles out of my course many a time, pulling at her with all my strength. *And* how she could rear."

"Yes, she *could* rear," said Mr. Bain in wistful admiration, "it ■■■ lovely to ■■■ her."

"And if she got you down she'd roll on you. She wouldn't get up till she'd broken every bone in your body. She killed ■■■ of my boys that way."

"But what about my Tiger?"

"Ah, he ■■■ a good horse. You could ■■■ by the way he rolled his eyes."

"Did you ever ■■■ him *buck*? Why he'd buck all ■■■ the corral. And he was wicked too. He struck ■■■ you if he got a chance."

"That ■■■ ■ good horse, Tiger. What became of him?"

"Broke his back. He bolted over ■■■ rocks into ■ creek with one of the boys riding him."

"Still you know I think that for *backing* my Shark . . ."

And so it went on. Presently I asked in some apprehension, "And the horse ■ am to ride to-morrow. Is he ■ good horse too?"

"One of the strongest in the country," said Mr. Bain. "It will be just like the English Grand National for you."

So the day ■■■ on. The steward trotted about with frightful helpings of curried fish; later with greyish tea and seed cake; later with more fish and lumps of hard, dark beef. The Indian ladies played their gramophone. The rancher had a nap. Mr. Bain told me more. At last, about seven, we arrived at our destination, and descended in the dark into a dug-out ■■■

"Be careful, be careful, if you're not used to them you will certainly be drowned," Mr. Bain admonished me, thus giving the first evidence of what, for the next few days, ■■■ going to prove ■ somewhat tiresome solicitude for my safety. The trouble ■■■ this. The Governor had requested Mr. Bain to look after me and, in his kindness, had stressed the fact that the conditions of the country ■■■ ■■■ to me and that he took ■ personal interest in my welfare. Mr. Bain, in his kindness, interpreted this to ■■■ that something very precious and very fragile had been put into his charge; if any accident ■■■ to befall me the Governor would ■■■ forgive it; danger, for one of delicate constitution, lurked in every activity of the day. If I helped ■ saddle



BRIDLING OF RUPUNUNI HORSE

the placid pack ■ he would cry out, "Stand back, ■ careful, ■ he will kick ■ your brains." If I picked up my ■ gun he would say, "Be careful, it will go off and shoot you."

Fortunately this scrupulous concern began to ■ thin after three days' travel, but during those three days it ■ as ■ anything could to straining my affection and gratitude towards him.

The dug-out paddled by an indiscernible figure in the stern, swept away from the ship ■ the dark water; the opposite bank was lightless. We scrambled up the slippery bank (Mr. Bain urging ■ anxiously not to fall down) and could just make out ■ rise in the ground surmounted by some kind of building; the boatman brought up a lantern and ■ climbed further. Mr. Bain in the meantime asking fretfully, "Yetto? Where's Yetto? I told him to be here with my hammock."

"Yetto ■ with de horses this morning. Now him go bottom-side to ■ party. Him ■ say nothing about de hammock."

"Yetto proper bad man," said Mr. Bain lapsing into vernacular. "Him proper Congo."

Thus in circumstances of discredit and terms of opprobrium I first heard the ■ of ■ to whom I ■ later to become warmly attached.

We climbed the little ■ and reached a thatched shelter, open at the sides, where two figures lay asleep in hammocks. They woke up, sat up and stared ■ us. A black ■ and his wife. Mr. Bain asked them if they knew what Yetto ■ done with his hammock.

"Him gone to de party."

"Where dis party?"

"Down to de river. Indian house. All de boys at de party."

So we went down to look for Yetto. We paddled almost noiselessly down stream, keeping into the bank. It was an effort to balance in the narrow, shallow craft. Eventually we heard music and hauled in under the bushes.

The party was in a large Indian hut. It was cosmopolitan in character, being made up of Brazilian *vaqueiros* (cowboys), boviananders, blacks and a number of clothed and semi-civilised Indians. Two Brazilians were playing guitars. The hostess came in to greet us.

"Good night," she said, shaking hands and leading us in. It was not etiquette to ask for Yetto at once so we sat on a bench and waited. A girl was walking from guest to guest with a bowl of dark home-brewed liquor; she handed a mug to each in turn, waiting while they drank and then refilling it for the next. Two or three negroes were dancing. The Indians sat in stolid rows, silently, soft hats pulled down over their eyes, staring gloomily at the floor. Now and then one would get up, stroll apathetically across to a girl and invite her to dance. The couple would then shuffle round in a somewhat European manner, separate without a word or a glance and resume their seats. The Indians, I learned later, are a solitary people and it takes many hours' heavy drinking to overcome any social interests in them. In fact the more I saw of Indians the greater I was struck by their similarity to the English. They like living with their families at great distances from their neighbours; they regard strangers with suspicion and despair; they are unprogressive and unambitious, fond of pets, hunting and fishing; they are undemon-

strative in love, unwarlike, morbidly modest; their chief aim seems to be on occasions to render themselves inconspicuous; in all points, except their love of strong drink and perhaps their improvidence, the direct opposite of the negro. On this particular evening however their only outstanding characteristic was inability to make a party go.

After a time Yetto detected drinking guiltily in a corner. He was a large middle-aged black of unusual ugliness. He was not ugly in the way a handsome negro is ugly. He was comic; huge feet and hands, huge mouth, and an absurd little Hitler moustache. He talked with a breadth of creoled intonation that for the first few days was quite unintelligible to me. Mr. Bain and he talked at some length about the hammock; a conversation in which "you proper Congo" occurred frequently. Then he left the party and was away with me to find it. At last at about ten o'clock Mr. Bain and I were established in the rest house.

Sleep was not easy. A hammock is one of the most agreeable things for an hour's rest, but it needs practice to adapt it for a night, particularly when it is tied to the wooden framework as three others, whose occupants with every movement set it vibrating. The hammocks used in Guiana were all of Indian manufacture, woven in thick cotton threads; they were light enough to roll up and tie behind one's saddle and have the particular property that they wrap round the body and "give" at any change of position. They were so much the cleanest and most portable of bed that I wonder they were not more used in other parts of the world. But they take some getting used to. It is difficult to fall out of them they are extremely draughty and if you do go to sleep

in the wrong position you are liable to wake up stiff in the back. Later I learned the correct way to lie, diagonally instead of vertically; later too I had harder days behind me. On this particular night I slept little. Nor did poor Mr. Bain who hour after hour with his head between his knees, gasping for breath in the throes of asthma. The black couple, however, made up for both with enormous, rhythmic

Next morning Yetto and some other boys appeared with the horses and the misgivings which I had been suffering since the conversation of the previous day, rapidly subsided. They were very small ponies and they stood placidly in the corner of the corral cropping the tops off the arid tufts of grass; they were too lethargic even to switch away the horse flies that clustered on their quarters; mine had been attacked by a vampire bat during the night and bore a slaver of blood on his withers. I never rode a good horse all the time I was in the savannahs; partly, of course, because in no quarter of the globe do people readily lend or hire good horses to a stranger, but chiefly because there are very few of them. Most of the ranches have large herds which are loosed at grass for three quarters of the year. When some needed the *vaqueiros* sent out to lasso them and bring them in; they are ridden for a week or two until they begin to show signs of collapse (through the heat of the climate and the cut of the Brazilian saddles they are very easily galled) and then turned out again. They are nearly all promiscuously bred, unshod and grass fed. Generally, when first in from the savannah, they bucked a little, shied, and were a nuisance for half an hour; after that they settled down to the regular four-mile-an-hour jog-trot; after the

fourth hour they had █████ be spurred and whipped █████ keep them in motion █████ all.

Mr. Bain had various duties to occupy him; the packing of the ox took █████ care, and it was █████ before we █████ ready. The black man, who had shared the █████ house the night before, █████ coming with us. He was manager of the ranch ten or twelve miles away, which was to be █████ first stop. We mounted and made to start off. My pony would not move.

"Loosen de reins," they said.

I loosened the reins and kicked him and hit. He took a few steps backwards.

"Loosen de reins," they said.

Then I █████ how they █████ riding, with the reins hanging quite loose, their hands folded on the front of the saddle. That is the style all over this part of the world; the reins are █████ tightened except in █████ occasional savage jerk; the aids █████ given on the neck instead of on the bit. Drama in movement is the object aimed at; the *vaqueiros* like a horse that █████ as they mount him will give two or three leaps in the air and then start off at a gallop; it does not matter how short a time the gallop lasts provided he takes them out of sight of the spectator; then after many hours' monotonous jogging they will spur him into life when they approach either ranch or village, arrive █████ the gallop, the horse's mouth lathered with foam, rein him back █████ to his hocks and dismount in a small dust storm. I had seen this often enough in the old days of the cinema, but had █████ realised that it occurred in real life.

We set off █████ the plain cantering a little but mostly jogging at what for many weeks █████ be my normal travelling gait. The country █████ dead flat and

featureless except for ant-hills and occasional clumps of palm; the ground ■■■ hard earth and sand tufted with dun-coloured grass; thousands of lizards scattered and darted under the horses' feet; otherwise there ■■■ no sign of life except the black crows who ■■■ ■■ our approach from the ■■■■■■ strewn along the track, and resettled to their feast behind ■■■ Here and in the forest ■■■ passed ■■■ ■■■■ every half-mile. Many ■■■ recently dead, for the last drive had lost forty per cent., and these ■■■ cantered past holding ■■■ breath; others were mere heaps of bone picked white by the ants, the mound of half-digested feed always prominent among the ribs.

During the ride Mr. Bain discoursed to the black rancher about history; I listened fitfully for my horse ■■■ continually dropping behind, but I was never out of earshot of the voice, voluble, rhapsodic, now rising to some sharp catastrophe, now running on evenly, urgently, irresistibly in the shimmering noon heat.

I caught bits ". . . ■■■ you see there ■■■ nothing but water. It says so in the Bible. Water covered the face of the earth. Then He divided the land from the waters. How did He do that, Mr. Yerwood? Why, by killing de crabs, and all de shells of de crabs became ground down by the tides and became sand. . . ."

". . . then there ■■■ Napoleon. He ■■■ only ■■ little corporal but he divorced his wife and married the daughter of an Emperor. Mark my words, Mr. Yerwood, all dose Bolsheviks will be doing that soon. . . ."

". . . and why did the English take ■■ long to subdue de little Boers. Because dey were so sporting. When dey take prisoners dey let dem go again for to give dem another chance. . . ."

We reached ■■■ destination in about two hours and found three sheds and ■ wired corral. It ■■■ less than I had expected. Through the influence of the cinema, "ranch" had taken on ■ rather glorious connotation in my mind; of solid, whitewashed buildings; a courtyard with a great tree casting its shadow in the centre and ■ balustraded wall, wrought iron gates, ■ shady interior with old Spanish furniture and ■ lamp burning before ■ baroque Madonna, and lovely girls with stock-whips and guitars. I do not say that I had expected to find this ■ Waranana; in fact it would have greatly surprised me; but I did feel that the ■■■ "ranch" had taken a fall.

Various dependants of Mr. Bain's were awaiting him here — policemen returning to duty, woodmen in charge of keeping the trail open; he also had stores and saddlery and some horses, left behind on his previous journey. All these he attended to ■ that by next morning everything was ready for us to start out. A moody young policeman named Price was handed over to me (or ■ to him), to act as my personal servant. Yetto ■■■ never far away, grinning sheepishly and constantly reprimanded. He held ■ uncertain position, partly government runner, partly groom, partly cook, partly porter.

Mr. Yerwood killed a chicken for ■ and, after ■ had dined, joined us and drank ■■■ of ■■■ rum. He and Mr. Bain talked about animals, their stories growing less probable ■ the evening progressed. Finally Mr. Yerwood described ■ "water-monkey" he had ■■■ seen; it was enormous and jet black; it had a grinning mouth full of sharp teeth; it ■■■ ■ ■ great speed; its habit was to submerge itself and wait for bathers whom it would draw down and pound to pieces on the rocks ■ the bottom. Just such ■ ■■■ had hap-

pened to ■ friend of Mr. Yerwood's; every bone in his body ■■ broken when ■ floated to the surface, Mr. Yerwood said.

Not ■ be outdone, Mr. Bain related how once, when walking in the late afternoon in the neighbourhood of Mount Roraima, he had encountered ■■ Missing Links, ■ man and his wife slightly ■■ normal size but bowed and simian in their movements; they ■■ naked except for a light covering of soft reddish down; they had stared ■ Mr. Bain a full half-minute, then said something he did not understand, and strolled off into the bush. After that there ■■ little ■ be said on the subject of animals. It ■■ ten o'clock - late for the district - ■ ■ took to our hammocks, leaving the lamp burning ■ ■ protection against vampire bats.

It would be tedious to record the daily details of the journey to Kurupukari. Mr. Bain managed everything; I merely trotted beside him; we took six days from the ranch, averaging about fifteen miles a day. Mr. Bain often explained how, in normal conditions, he did the whole journey in two stages at full gallop all the way. On this occasion ■■ had to keep pace with the pack ■■ and the walking men, and anyway I do not think our ponies ■■ up to much more. All the time we only passed ■■ human being - a Portuguese - speaking Indian, padding along ■ foot, going down to the river ■ ■■ inscrutable errand. For two days ■ travelled ■■ grass land and then entered the bush ■ crossing the Yawakuri River. Immediately ■■ entire conditions changed; it ■■ cool and quite sunless. The green, submarine darkness of the jungle has been described frequently enough but it can never, I think, be realised

until one has been there. The trail was ■ broad as an English lane with vast, impenetrable walls of forest rising ■ a hundred and fifty feet ■ either side; the first twenty feet from the ground ■ dense undergrowth, then the trunks of the trees emerged, quite bare, like architectural columns rising vertical and featureless until they broke into the solid roof of leaves, through which appeared only rare star points of direct sunlight. There ■ always men working to keep the trail clear of fallen timber and there ■ always trees lying across it at frequent intervals. Usually ■ kind of line had been chopped round these through the bush and ■ would dismount and lead our horses. There were also creeks every few miles, low at this time of year, so that we could ride through them. In the wet season, Mr. Bain said, you had to crawl across a tacuba leading a swimming horse, carry your baggage ■ and load and re-load your pack animals four or five times ■ day. Sometimes the trail had been completely cleared with a "corduroy" of logs through the marshy places; elsewhere only the undergrowth had been chopped away and the trees stood up in the middle of the path; once ■ ■ to ■ place where the virgin forest had been burned and ■ second growth of low bush had taken its place; there was loose white sand here, blinding to the eyes after the gloom of the forest and heavy going for the horses.

Everyone who has ever been there, has remarked on the apparent emptiness of the bush. The real life, ■ naturalists write, takes place a hundred feet up in the tree-tops; it is there that you would find all the flowers and parrots and monkeys, high overhead in the sunlight, ■ coming down except when there is ■ storm. Occasionally ■ would find the floor of the trail ■

with petals from flowers ■■■ of sight above ■■■ I have not ■ naturalist's trained observation and ■■ doubt missed many things that he would have seen; certainly ■■■ little enough; one jaguar slinking away ahead of us, two or three acouris, ■ large rodent that makes possible but dull eating, some tortoises that the boys eagerly collected for meat, an incredible number of ants; ants of all sizes and shades, alone and in endless caravans; they were everywhere; it ■■■ impossible to find ■ square three inches of ground anywhere without ■ ant in it; you could not throw away the dregs of your mug without drowning one.

We met the first snake ■■ our first day in the bush. Mr. Bain and I were riding abreast ■ mile or so ahead of the baggage. He was telling me his views on marriage (" . . . whom God has joined together let no man put asunder. Yes. But tell me this. Who is God? God is love. So when a couple have ceased to love ■■ another . . .") when he suddenly reined up and said in a melodramatic whisper: "Stop. Look ahead. Dere is ■ terrible great snake." It was in the days when he still regarded my safety as peculiarly precarious. "Don't ■■■ near - it may attack you."

Sure enough about twenty yards ahead ■■ ■ very large snake, curled up in the middle of the trail.

"What kind is it?"

"I ■■■ ■■ anything like him before. Look at his terrible great head," hissed Mr. Bain.

It certainly ■■ ■ very odd-looking head from where ■■ sat, swollen and brown and quite different in appearance from the mottled coils. Mr. Bain dismounted and I followed. Very stealthily, step by step he approached the creature. It did not move and so, emboldened, he

began to throw pieces of dead wood at it. None of them fell within six feet of their mark. He approached closer, motioning ■ back apprehensively. Then the snake suddenly raised his neck, retched and for ■ moment it appeared ■ though his head had fallen off. Then it became clear what had happened. We had surprised ■ python in the act of slowly swallowing ■ large toad. It had got down the back legs and ■ slowly sucking in the body when it had been disturbed; the "terrible great head" ■ the toad's body half in and half out of the jaws. The python averted its own delicately pointed face and slipped away into the bush; the toad showed little gratitude or surprise at his escape, but dragged himself rather laboriously under ■ log and sat down to consider his experience.

But if there was little to ■ there was a great deal to hear; always, but particularly from sunset until dawn, the bush was alive with sounds. We used to turn in early, usually between seven and eight, because there was nothing to do after dark; there were no chairs to sit in or table to sit at; the lantern light ■ too dim for reading. As soon as ■ finished supper ■ rolled up in our hammocks and there was nothing to do but lie and listen for ten or eleven hours. There ■ the immediate sounds of poor Mr. Bain's asthma; of the boys squatting round their fire, sometimes singing, ■ often arguing, always quite unintelligible when they ■ among themselves; there ■ our ■ beasts grazing in the corral and limping about at hobble; often ■ would hear the crash of dead timber falling in the forest ■ us, but around and above and through all these ■ the sounds of the bush. As I have said, I ■ no naturalist; Mr. Bain's experienced ■ was able to pick

out innumerable voices that ■■■ merged in ■■■ general chatter, but even to me there were ■■■ sounds that ■■■ unmistakable; there were the "howler" monkeys; I never saw one except stuffed in ■■■ museum — he was ■■■ small ginger creature — but ■■■ heard them roaring like lions ■■■ days; in the far distance it ■■■ like the noise of the dredgers that ■■■ used ■■■ attend me lying sleepless night after night at Port Said. There ■■■ the frogs, some shrill like those in the South of France, others deep and hoarse. There ■■■ ■■■ bird which mooed like ■■■ cow, named, appositely enough, the "cow-bird," and another which struck two sharp metallic notes ■■■ though with ■■■ hammer on ■■■ copper cistern; this ■■■ called the "bell-bird"; there ■■■ ■■■ bird that made ■■■ noise like a motor bicycle starting up; ■■■ kind of woodpecker drilling very rapidly with his beak; there were others of various kinds who whistled like errand boys. There was one which repeated "Qu'est ce qu'il dit?" endlessly in a challenging tone. There was ■■■ insect which buzzed in ■■■ particular ■■■ "Listen," said Mr. Bain one day, "that is most interesting. It is what ■■■ call the 'six o'clock beetle,' because he always makes that noise ■■■ exactly six o'clock."

"But it is ■■■ quarter past four."

"Yes, that is what is ■■■ interesting."

At one time and another in the country ■■■ heard the "six o'clock beetle" at every hour of the day and night.

But experienced "bush men" say that they ■■■ tell the time as accurately by the sounds of the bush, ■■■ ■■■ mariner ■■■ by the ■■■

On the whole this part of the journey was comfortable enough. We had ample stores, every evening there ■■■ a creek to wash in; nothing went seriously wrong with



REST HOUSE ON CATTLE TRAIL

Facing page 541

the animals ■ ■ boys; there ■ ■ rain. At night ■ ■ lay in the ■ ■ houses that have been put up every fifteen miles or ■ for the *vaqueiros* driving down the cattle. These ■ ■ simply thatched shelters, sometimes with floors and breast-high walls; there ■ ■ no furniture and sometimes ■ ■ found the fabric of the place half demolished by bucks who, with their peculiar improvidence, had chopped it up for firewood rather than step five yards ■ the bush outside; often too ■ ■ found the houses foul with the remains of bad fish and meat left by the previous occupants; ■ ■ ■ ■ had died ■ windward of ■ whom it had been ■ one's business ■ remove. Yetto's cooking was unbelievable and consisted mainly of boiling up corned beef with vast quantities of red peppers and rock salt. But, as I have said, it ■ ■ the whole ■ comfortable week and ■ delightful one. There ■ ■ enough exertion to make one glad when ■ ■ had reached the day's destination; the new scenery, utterly unlike anything I had seen before, ■ ■ a continual pleasure. Mr. Bain's company was a full enough experience in itself. When on the seventh day ■ ■ reached Kurupukari I ■ ■ sorry that this stage of the journey ■ ■ over.

Kurupukari ■ ■ marked large ■ the map and had figured constantly in our conversation for the past week. I had little idea, however, of what to expect and vaguely imagined something like the lake stations at Victoria Nyanza ■ Lake Tanganyika - a pier, ■ government office, the commissioner's residence, half a dozen corrugated iron store-houses, ■ shop or two, ■ post office, ■ handful of native huts and a flagstaff. What I found ■ ■ ■ ■ surprise. There was a flagstaff, certainly, lying flat in the grass, still under construction; it was ■ ■

pleted and erected during my stay; later Mr. Bain hopes to obtain a flag for it. But there ■■■ no landing, ■■■ habitations, only a single wooden house standing in ■ clearing ■ ■ slight hill.

The Essequibo bends there, so that the place had the look of a peninsula; the river ■■■ at this ■■■ ■■■ immense, and the wooded islands round which it divided and converged made it seem larger still; ■ broad creek flowed into it immediately opposite the station; there were sand dunes and rocks, submerged at full flood, but now high and dry, confusing one's ■■■ of direction; there were cascades and patches of still lake so that one seemed to be surrounded by ■ system of ornamental waters, and across its vast and varied expanse one could see the green precipices of forest and appreciate, as one could not when directly beneath them, the freakish height of the trees and the gay dapple of blossom at their summit.

The house, like most in the country, was of one storey, raised on piles ten or twelve feet from the ground. There were steps leading to a verandah; in the interior ■■■ ■ single, large room, with partitioned cubicles at the sides. This ■■■ was the law court, dignified with a dais, ■ witness stand and a dock; in ■■■ of the cubicles ■■■ ■ iron bedstead which I occupied, the others had struts for the hammocks; the verandah ■■■ the living-room with a table and two arm-chairs, it ■■■ also the government office; some tattered, printed regulations, ■ calendar and ■ obsolete map hung ■ the walls; there was ■ desk with pigeon-holes for licences, forms, stamps; here were transacted the multifarious functions of local government; a ■■■ was levied on passing cattle, grants of land ■■■ registered, pilots' certificates were



ESSEQUIBO FROM KURUPUKARI HOUSE

endorsed, letters ■■■■ accepted for the irregular river service to the coast. A resident black sergeant of police took charge of them. Under us, between the supporting piles, there lived, under the minimum of restraint, a dozen ■■ so convicts. These ■■■■ mostly Indians serving sentence for cattle stealing; they ■■■■ sent out daily ■■ work on the trail armed with cutlasses, under the supervision of ■ single policeman or under ■■ supervision ■■ all; they ■■■■ sometimes sent ■■ messengers on two- ■■ three-day journeys alone into the bush; they slept under ■ more solid shelter than in their homes and ate more regularly and more copiously and all returned the fatter and prouder for their contact with civilisation.

Mr. Bain's cubicle had a cupboard, without lock, in which he kept or attempted ■ keep, a few personal possessions; on the walls ■■■■ pasted some pictures of film stars cut out of magazines and ■ few picture post cards. Any passing rancher would and constantly did, occupy the room, for the house was a regular rest house on the trail and it was usually a matter of ■ day or ■■ ■■ get ■ drive ■■■■ the river (once there had been a flat-bottomed ferry boat to facilitate the operation but that had lately been sunk and the last few drives had had to swim ■■■■ with deplorable losses). Everyone in fact who passed on any occasion used the house ■■ ■■ matter of right; the captains and bosuns of the river boats squatted about chatting in the courtroom; bucks in for ■ gun licence spent a day ■■ two getting the latest river gossip; ballata* collectors waited here for transport. This busy place ■■■■ the nearest thing Mr. Bain had to a

* A substitute for rubber used principally for submarine ■■■■; periodically a thriving trade product in the ■■■■. The Indians bleed it from trees, and exchange it with representatives of ■■■■ company for cloth, hardware, etc.

home, a curious contrast to the trim little official residences of British Africa. In ■ his huge district there ■ not ■ place which Mr. Bain could lock up; his life was spent eternally jogging up and down the cattle trail and ■ the plain ■ the ultimate frontier station ■ Bon Success, hanging his hammock in the *vaqueiros'* shelters or putting up the night at the scattered little ranch houses of the savannah, living from year's end ■ year's end in camp conditions except for rare official visits to ■ Georgetown boarding-house. It ■ not everybody's job.

Unsatisfactory [redacted] awaited [redacted] at Kurupukari; our boat from Bartika had not arrived and Mr. Bain who had hitherto been unreasonably confident about it, suddenly became correspondingly depressing. That [redacted] the way in the bush, he said, [redacted] had to be used to things like that; there was not much water in the river, no doubt they [redacted] having a difficult time [redacted] the rapids; it might be weeks before they arrived; they might never arrive at all; that [redacted] probably it—the boat had been wrecked and the men all drowned; the barbed wire and the stores anyway would be lost beyond hope. How right he had been to bring [redacted] up the trail . . . and so [redacted]

Meanwhile the garrison was reduced to the milder discomforts of a siege; of a siege in the early days, that is to say, before the garrison get properly down to eating their wounded. We had a box and a half of biscuits and a tin of milk; otherwise we had exhausted all our tinned stores. We were entirely out of butter, potatoes, flour, sugar, and tobacco. It was uncomfortable, particularly as there seemed no certainty of relief, but there was no danger of starvation. There were several

bullocks grazing outside the house, one of which Mr. Bain had killed and dried; ■ boviander ■ the water grew ■ little maize; and there were great sacks of *farine* for the convicts' rations. Both this and the dried beef need ■ word ■ two of explanation since they are the staple diet of the cattle country and less palatable or satisfying food I ■ struck in any part of the world.

Farine is ■ vegetable product made from ■ root. It is tantalising to speculate how it ever ■ to be discovered, for cassava in its natural state is poisonous and a fairly elaborate process of pulping and squeezing and drying is necessary to convert it to ■ edible condition. When and how, in the unchronicled days before the first European explorers of the sixteenth century, did the Indians conceive the idea? After what failures and experiments? How did the taste and knowledge spread among the countless antagonistic nationalities? For over ■ great part of the continent, among tribes utterly dissimilar in race and habit are found the same cultivated cassava crops, the ■ ingenious wicker tubes, that contract and expand in its manufacture. There ■ ■ to this or to the other ■ immediate question; why, now that most parts ■ comparatively accessible and other cereals ■ be introduced, do not only the Indians but the foreign settlers persist in planting this ■ vegetable that takes most trouble to prepare and is most repulsive when prepared? I asked several people and they said vaguely that it was the food of the country; that the boys expected it; that ■ got used to it in time. For I used "edible" in the ■ sense as it is used in the bush ■ qualifying any substance not actively lethal; turtles' eggs are ■ sidered "edible," so are lizards and the fat white grubs

which inhabit the heart of some palm trees ; on the way up Mr. Bain would frequently offer me bitter little berries ■ tasteless, mushy fruits ■ “ bush food.” *Farine* was very difficult to manage. It is like coarse sawdust in appearance ; ■ granulated, tapioca-coloured substance of intense hardness and ■ faint taste of brown paper. It is eaten quite alone, or with hot water to soften it or more luxuriously with milk or the water in which the *tasso* has been boiled.

Tasso is the dry beef mentioned above. It is the incarnation of every joke ever made about meat at schools or messes or charitable institutions. It would certainly cause ■ mutiny in any English prison. It is prepared in this way. The killing of a beast is ■ event of some importance in the immediate neighbourhood. Indians get news of it and appear mysteriously like gulls round a trawler when the catch is cleaned. A few choice morsels are cut away and cooked and eaten fresh. The Indians carry off the head and the entrails. The rest is sliced into thin slabs, rolled in salt and hung up to dry. A few days of sun and hot savannah wind reduce it to ■ black, leathery condition in which it will remain uncorrupt indefinitely. Even the normally omnivorous ants will not touch it. It is rolled up and tied to the back of one's saddle ; it is even, so ■ was told, put under the saddle above the blanket to keep it tender and protect the horse from galling. When the time ■■■■ to eat it, it is scrubbed fairly clean of dust and salt and boiled in water. It emerges softened but fibrous and tasteless. ■ ■■ conceive it might be possible for a ■■■■ ■ stomach a little *farine* with ■ rich and aromatic stew ; or a little *tasso* with plenty of fresh vegetables and bread. The food of the savannah is *farine* and *tasso* and nothing else.

For four days there was no sign of the boat. I went out with a gun but did not see any game. It had all migrated, Mr. Bain said, on account of the dry weather and the boviander's hunting. Lack of tobacco was making me short of temper. There seemed no point in hanging on indefinitely; if the boat had been sunk I should not hear ██████ of it for weeks. I decided to take some *tasso* and biscuits and set off for Anai at the end of the cattle trail, where the resident policeman ██████ said to keep hens. From him I could get enough provisions to take me to the first ranch and so move me by stages to Bon Success where there was a Portuguese store. From there it was only a few miles to the mission house. Mr. Bain could lend me a riding horse and a pack horse as far as Anai, and Yetto all the way. A policeman was also going up to duty at Bon Success who would carry a certain amount of baggage. It would be a far less comfortable journey than the first week had been, but it was possible. Anything was better than staying on without books or provisions at Kurupukari. Then when all this was decided, late on the last afternoon, ██████ of the convicts reported the sound of a motor. Mr. Bain and I hurried down to the river bank. He too could hear it plainly, though it was half an hour before the sound reached my duller ears. Pessimistic to the last, Mr. Bain said it was probably another boat, but in the end, just at sundown it came into sight, a grey blob very slowly approaching. Their sharper eyes — Mr. Bain's and the little cluster of convicts and police — instantly recognised it as ours. In another half-hour it was there. An open boat low in the water, with an outboard engine. Nothing could be unloaded that night. There was a crew of four or five, each with a story to tell. They camped under the boat

and long into the night we could hear them arguing and boasting their fire. We went to bed suffused though by wine with renewed geniality.

The unloading took all the morning and as I saw my stores packed bit by bit against the wall of my cubicle I began to despair of ever moving them. But Yetto was confident that he and the horse and the policeman could manage them with ease. We moved the horses to the river that afternoon and hobbled them in the corral on the opposite bank so that they would be ready to start the next day. The pack horse took unkindly to the water and swallowed a good deal on the way across.

Everything seemed set for my departure. I had even some kind of plan evolved for my ultimate route. It was possible, said Mr. Bain, to take a steamer from Bon Success down the Takutu to Boa Vista. That meant nothing to me but Mr. Bain explained that it was an important Brazilian town—next to Manaus the most important town in Amazonas. He had never been there himself but he knew those who had and in his description he made it a place of peculiar glamour—dissipated and violent; a place where revolutions were plotted and political assassinations committed; from there regular paddle steamers plied to Manaus—a city of inexpressible grandeur, of palaces and opera houses, boulevards and fountains, swaggering military in spurs and white gloves, cardinals and millionaires; and from there great liners went direct to Lisbon. Mr. Bain made a very splendid picture of it all—so graphic and full of passages so personal and penetrating that it was difficult to accept his assurance that he knew it only by repute. His eyes flashed as he told of it and his arms swept in circles.

I felt that it was ■ singularly fortunate █████ who went to Boa Vista and Manaus.

On the eve of my departure Mr. Bain and I had ■ intimate and convivial dinner. Next morning I sent the stores █████ with Yetto and the policeman; they █████ to arrange the pack horse's load and their █████ and start ahead of me. Soon after midday I went █████ myself. Mr. Bain came to █████ me off. We found and saddled the horse; I mounted and after many expressions of mutual good will, I rode off alone up the trail.

CHAPTER III

Difficulties of transport—second start—Yetto, Price and Sinclair—Jagger—Yetto's better days—Surana—Anai—an ill-natured horse—a mystic.

As soon ■ I set out ■ my own, things began to go slightly against me; I was pursued by ■ cataclysmic doom but by ■ series of mild mishaps which began within half ■ hour of my saying good-bye to Mr. Bain.

I ■ jogging happily up the trail, feeling for the first time a little like ■ explorer when I met the neighbouring boviander squatting moodily on a tree stump beside a pile of tins that ■ obviously ■ part of my stores. The man grinned amiably and took off his hat. "Yetto and Price say to take dese back," he explained. "Horse no can carry. Him lie down all de time."

"Lies down?"

"All de time. Dey beat him with ■ stick and him goes little little way and den him lie down again. Him no get top side. De boys make pack lighter."

I looked at the pile and ■ that with ■ minimum of discrimination, they had abandoned my entire meat ration. There seemed nothing to be done. I picked out half ■ dozen tins, rolled them up in the hammock at the back of my saddle and told the man to present the rest ■ Mr. Bain with my compliments. Then I rode on less contentedly.

About six miles farther on ■ came upon the pack horse unsaddled and hobbled, his pack lying on the ground

him. I shouted for Yetto who eventually appeared from the bush where he and Price had been having a nap.

"Him weary," said Yetto. "Him no carry pack topside." We undid the loads and rearranged them, sifting out everything unessential from the heap. An Indian boy had appeared mysteriously and I entrusted to him the stores we could not take, to carry back to Kurupukari. Then I rode on ahead to the shelter where I should spend the night. I waited several hours and there was no trace of the baggage. Then I resaddled my horse and rode back. About a mile from where I had left them, Yetto and Price were sitting under a fallen tree eating *farine*. The horse was grazing near them, the packs were on the ground.

"Dat horse am sick. Him no go at all."

It was late afternoon. There was nothing for it but to return to Kurupukari, so I left Price to guard the stores, told Yetto to follow with the pack horse and rode back again to the river.

That ride remains one of the most vivid memories of the cattle trail. Checked and annoyed as I was, the splendour of the evening compensated for everything. Out on the savannah there is no twilight; the sun goes down blazing over the horizon, affording five or ten minutes of gold and crimson glory; then darkness. In the forest night opens slowly like a yawn. The colours gradually deepened, the greens pure and intense to the point of saturation, the tree trunks and the bare earth glowing brown; the half shades, the broken and refracted fragments of light all disappeared and left only fathomless depths of pure colour. Then dusk spread; distances became incalculable and obstacles detached themselves unexpectedly and suddenly

near ; and while it was almost night in the trail the tops of the trees were still ablaze with sunlight, till eventually they too darkened and their flowers were lost. And all the pattering and whistling and chattering of the bush at night broke out loudly on all sides, and the tired little horse — who was doing a double journey and, being always on the move, had no instinct for home — suddenly pricked his ears and raised his head and stepped out fresh as though his day were only just beginning.

It was black night when I reached the corral. I hobbled him, took off his bridle and saddle and carried them down to the water's edge. The other bank showed no light. After prolonged shouting I heard an answering call and twenty minutes later a canoe appeared suddenly at my feet. We paddled to the house and I sent the man reluctantly back for Yetto. Mr. Bain received me without surprise. He never thought I would get far alone.

Next day there was more reorganisation. The pack horse was clearly unfit for the journey so the sergeant hired me a donkey named Maria and a vain young negro named Sinclair, who had been hanging about without apparent purpose in and out of the house for many days. I was still obliged to abandon a great part of my stores. One of the heaviest items was the ammunition and gun ; it was a cheap Belgian weapon I had bought at the iron-mongers in Georgetown but it had exercised a fascination on the sergeant since I arrived ; I had seen him playing with it, holding it on his shoulder and squinting down the barrel. Now he offered to buy it and the ammunition for twenty-five dollars, which was about what I had paid. I let him have it, and from then onwards I passed a day without seeing quantities of game.



SINCLAIR, PRICE AND YETTO

Next day we went out again and reassembled at the place where I had left the stores, Yetto, Price, Sinclair, the horse, Maria, and myself, and began dividing up the loads and the duties. For his half-dollar a day a boy is assumed to be able to carry about fifty pounds for about twenty miles. It was Yetto's boast, of which the others were quick to take advantage, that he could carry a hundred pounds for fifty miles. I used to see them piling things on to Yetto's back and him taking them with pride and good humour. Relations were somewhat complicated by the fact that Price was not really under my orders at all. He was going to duty at Bon Success. He was new to the bush and did not like it. I made him groom and gave him the lamp and cooking utensils to carry. Sinclair was an odious youth anyway, but he knew a little about cooking. The other two hated him and on the last days went without food altogether rather than take it from him. He asked if he might drive the ass and I said yes. He then made the point that it was impossible both to carry a pack and drive the ass who strayed all over the path and needed constant goading along. In point of fact Maria did nothing of the sort. She quickly got wise to the fact that if she stayed behind with the boys, they unslung their loads as I was out of sight, and put them on her back. Accordingly she used to break away and trot along happily beside the horse. This was maddening for me, because every few miles her pack would work loose and she would start scattering bits of luggage along the trail and I would have to stop and rearrange things.

Every evening Yetto had complaints against Sinclair. "Chief, dat boy is good for all. Him too young; him not know discipline." Every day I used to decide

pay him off and send him back; then I used to think of Yetto's detestable cooking and hesitate. And on these occasions Sinclair always succeeded in putting me in a good temper. He would appear with my towel just when I wanted it; he would find a lime tree and unasked prepare me rum and lime when I returned from my bath in the creek; he knew exactly the things I should want, map, journal, fountain pen, glasses, and laid them out just where I needed them beside the hammock. So in spite of the fact that I knew him to be lazy, untruthful, disloyal, sulky and conceited, he remained in my service to the end as far as the frontier.

To this rather absurd little band there attached himself a spectral figure named Jagger. I had seen him, too, moping on the steps at Kurupukari and heard Mr. Bain upbraiding him on more than one occasion on some obscure subject connected with the post office. He was a coloured youth in the technical Georgetown sense of the word and in that sense only; for I never saw a face so devoid of a nameable hue. It was a ghastly *grisaille* except for his eyes which were of a yellowish tinge, the colour of trodden snow, and circled with pink. He loped along with me carrying his own food and belongings; never asking for anything except company, always eager to help with advice. He spoke accurate and elaborate English, in a toneless, lisping voice that would have sounded supercilious had it not been accompanied by his expression of inflexible misery and self-disgust. He was ragged, destitute and extremely ill and was making for the Rupununi district as his last resource; going, he said, to visit friends, which was probably another way of saying that he was about to join that curious race of tramps who wander about the cattle country, there and

in Brazil, living indefinitely on the open hospitality of the ranches.

His father had been a man of ■■■■ substance. Jagger had been educated at ■ school and university in Scotland; he had married ■ Portuguese girl and cut rather ■ dash for some time in Georgetown. I ■■■■ fully mastered the history of his downfall which ■■■■ connected in ■■■■ way with litigation, wills and moneylenders. Yetto explained it quite simply, "Him ■■■■ robbed by his brudders."

He had fever badly, and ■■■■ the second day arrived at the midday halt well behind the others, and dragging himself along unsteadily. He hung up his hammock, rolled into it and lay with averted face, unwilling to eat or talk. As I rode on that afternoon I began to worry about Jagger. It really looked as though he might be going to die on our hands; in his present state he would never reach the savannah ■■■■ foot. Here I felt was the time for a Christian gentleman to show his principles; to emulate Sir Philip Sidney.

"Yetto," I said that evening, "I think that to-morrow Jagger had better ride my horse. I ■■■■ easily walk the next few stages."

"Dat's all right, chief," said Yetto. "Him not ■■■■ on."

"Not ■■■■ on?"

"Him plenty sick. Him stay in his hammock, back where ■■■■ had breakfast."

"But will he be all right?"

"Oh yes, chief, him'll be all right. Him sick, dat's all."

Later that evening half a dozen *vaqueiros* arrived with ■ drove of fifty cattle. I gave them quinine for Jagger

and instructions [REDACTED] look after him, but I never heard whether [REDACTED] no [REDACTED] reached the savannah.

Various unsensational incidents stand out in my memory of this phase of the journey. A torrential rain-storm in which I arrived soaked through and through [REDACTED] the shelter [REDACTED] hours ahead of the outfit. [REDACTED] had been warned of the dangers in that climate of sitting about wet, [REDACTED] I stripped and made [REDACTED] fire. I must have looked [REDACTED] unseemly figure, stark except for hat and riding boots, scrabbling in the bush for dead wood. I had not made a fire since I [REDACTED] boy scout fifteen years before. Contrary [REDACTED] all expectation it burned magnificently; I hung up my clothes round it [REDACTED] wooden props and they were [REDACTED] steaming. Then I realised a thing that ought to have been obvious—that a fire needs constant refuelling. I went out again into the rain looking for wood, but without [REDACTED] cutlass could get very little. Then with very little compunction I tore up a large patch of the bark floor and substantial bits of the structure of the house and burned those. A week before I had been bitterly commenting [REDACTED] the Indians who had done the same, pointing out that it showed [REDACTED] peculiar trait in their racial character—a listlessness, improvidence, a wantonness, irresponsible egotism, arrested development—I had found [REDACTED] epithets to describe my contempt for their destructive habits.

A meeting on the trail with three Englishmen; one a rancher with [REDACTED] reputation for eccentricity; the other [REDACTED] naturalists who for some years had been tramping about tropical America in the pay of that last and now defunct survivor of the "Fairy Godmother Departments," the Empire Marketing Board. The three were



RUPUNUNI VAQUEIRO WITH OX-HEAD

coming down together on foot. One had dysentery and looked deathly; the other ■■■ by ■■■ abnormally robust. They had just shot ■ "bush turkey." We stewed it and ate it together and then parted company, though not before ■■■ of the naturalists had caught ■ peculiar fly in the nostril of my horse.

A ■■■ about ■ "bad ■■■" which is what in England would be called ■ wild steer. This ■■■ learned about from the *vaqueiros* mentioned above to whose good attention I committed the wretched Jagger. The "bad cow" had broken away from the drive and ■■■ last seen champing defiantly in the middle of the trail six or ■■■ miles in front of us. There were deep creeks on either side of him which he ■■■ unlikely to cross alone, ■■■ that he would probably be in about the same place ■■■ the next day. He would charge at sight, the *vaqueiros* said. Accordingly I rode warily and with some misgiving when I got to the danger ■■■. But it ■■■ all right. A tiger had got him the night before and the ■■■ were already clustered round his carcass just where the *vaqueiros* said I would find him.

During the first week's ride, when I had been with Mr. Bain, continually entertained by the fresh spate of his reminiscences, I had had practically no conversation with the boys. Now in the evenings, and particularly after wet days when I issued a ration of rum, I found them very sound company, particularly Yetto. I wish I could reproduce his ■■■ of speech, but to attempt it would ■■■ torturing the reader with phoneticisms. It was difficult to follow, being full of vowel sounds of immense breadth; the diction was creolese with a curious admixture of rather unusual words such ■■■ "weary" and "matrimony."

Like most people in the colony Yetto had done a variety of jobs in his time. He had formed one of the police guard of honour when the Prince of Wales visited Georgetown and the Prince had shaken hands with him. He had set out an ill-fated expedition to Cuba — a story which was introduced by: "Chief, did you know a black man from Grenada named Adams?"

"No, I'm afraid not."

"Him stole twenty dollars off of me."

Adams had taken charge of the joint funds and absconded in Trinidad. Yetto had been married but had not liked it. He had seen the Georgetown riots. But the high summit of his experience had been a lucky strike as a "pork knocker." He had come back to Georgetown with \$800 and had spent it in six weeks.

"Why, Chief, I took an automobile and drove round and round de town with three girls and me give them gold bangles and went to all de best rum shops and hotels. But me didn't drink no rum, no chief, nor beer either. It was gin and whisky all de time. Me didn't get no sleep for days, driving round all night with the girls."

"But tell me, Yetto, did you get any better girls for all this money you were spending?"

"No, Chief, just de same girls but me like to see dem happy. Dey fine girls but you could get dem for a dollar a night. But I give dem gold bangles and gin and whisky and I drive round and round in an automobile. All de girls plenty fond of Yetto when he had de money. . . . But I was young den. Now I learned wisdom."

"What would you do if you had the money now?"

There was a pause and I expected Yetto to tell me that he would buy a farm or a shop and settle down from

the arduous and unsettled life he was now living. "Well, Chief, ■■■ tell you dis. Me would spend all de money on myself. Me would buy fine clothes and rings. Den de girls would go wid ■■■ for de hope of what ■■■ was going to give dem. And in de end me would give dem nothing." And he opened his vast mouth and roared with laughter, his gold teeth flashing in the firelight.

But his pleasures had not been wholly philistine. During that rapturous six weeks ■■■ Italian opera singer had given ■ concert in Georgetown (. . . shadow and spangle of cheap tragedy . . . the ageing prima donna, Grand Dukes and English Milords behind her, pitifully touring like faint and ever widening ripples in ■ lake, in the company of her seedy and devoted manager, yearly to more remote and less lucrative audiences to the final, tartarean abyss of a Georgetown concert hall. . . .)

"De cheapest ticket ■■■ two dollars but me went with my girl. Dere was all white people dere and de way her sung was wonderful, wid ■ different coloured dress for each song and dey was in all de languages, French and English and Italian and German and Spanish. Dat lady knew everything. Her made us cry."

The last time that Yetto had ■■■ up the trail, had been in the company of ■ government vet. and his wife and the presence of the lady gave the occasion ■ peculiar lustre in Yetto's eyes. It had been altogether a very magnificent expedition with collapsible camp tables, picnic baskets and a cocktail shaker. They had travelled ten miles ■ day ■ foot with a troop of porters. Every place where they had halted was sanctified in Yetto's eyes. "Dis is where Mrs. McDougal shot an accouri." . . . "Dis is where Mrs. McDougal ■■■ so weary dat Mr. McDougal had to take off her boots." . . . "Dis

is where Mrs. McDougal ■■■ ■ bath." . . . Yetto had ■■■ missed ■ detail of her habits or idiosyncrasies. " Mrs. McDougal had ■ great fancy for ■■■ Her took my snapshot. Her said, ' Now I must take Yetto,' and her did. Doctor McDougal promised ■ send me a print. To-morrow ■■■ show you de very tree where Mrs. McDougal took my snapshot. When ■■■ get to Takama her say, ' I don't know what ■■■ should have done without Yetto.' Dere's nothing ■■■ wouldn't do for Mrs. McDougal."

On the third day from Kurupukari ■■■ crossed ■ dry creek and ■■■■ into ■ little savannah named after the creek, Surana, where there ■■■ ■ large Indian village. These were sophisticated Macushis who were in constant contact with the ranches and the traffic of the trail. The men all ■■■■ shorts, grubby singlets and felt hats, the women cotton dresses. Some of them spoke a little English, some Portuguese; ■■■■ of them had worked for Europeans at one time or another; there ■■■ ■ black man living among them, married to ■■■ of their girls. Altogether ■ highly cosmopolitan and contaminated lot, but even so, they had retained ■■■■ of the characteristics of their race, particularly in the plan, ■■■ rather absence of plan, of the village.

" Large " ■■■■ be interpreted in the local sense, in which a dozen huts make an important place, twenty something quite exceptional. Indeed I never saw a village as large ■■■ that though later in the Wapishiana country I slept ■ one where, I ■■■ told later, ■■■ less than twenty-two huts could be counted from one spot. But I arrived there after dark and set off at the first glimmer of dawn so that I never knew until later the size of the place.

About a dozen or fifteen huts could be seen in Surana. I believe there were others out of sight. The trail ran straight down the middle of the savannah, a bare streak. Half a dozen houses were built here and there, but at considerable distances from one another. Tiny, meandering footpaths ran between them. Other huts lay half a mile or more away and, as always in Indian villages, there was a ruin or two and a house under construction. It was all very different from the compact, stockaded townships of Africa. A polite English-speaking young man came out to meet me and showed me an empty mud and thatched hut where I could spend the night, and the water hole, half a mile distant where I could wash. Later some of the women brought me a present of bananas. It was a hospitable place. Many of them assembled to stare and talk to the boys.

"Dey all love Yetto," said Yetto.

That evening after supper Sinclair came to me leading an Indian and said, "Chief, do you want to see this boy's arse?"

I misunderstood him and said no, somewhat sharply.

"Fine, young 'arse'," said Sinclair. "Your 'arse' plenty weary. You want to see 'arse' to go Bon Success." He further explained that Surana was much beset by bats and tigers that the Indians left all their horses and cattle on the other side of the bush at Anai. The boy would come with me next day, and if I liked the look of his horse I could have it for a dollar a day for the rest of the journey. I should be needing two horses, because Maria had to go back to Kurupukari, so I closed with the offer.

Next day we reached Anai on the edge of the savannah. It was exhilarating to see open country again after the

cramped weeks in the forest and the view from Anai ■ late evening ■ peculiarly fine; to the ■ lay the Pakaraima Mountains; far away ■ the south the wooden tops of the Kanuku hills were just visible on the horizon; at our feet and before ■ lay the level savannah dotted with "sand-paper" trees and broken in places by islands of bush; ■ high wind was blowing from the south.

Anai itself ■ simply ■ house, like the ■ Kuru-pukari only slightly ■ dilapidated for no ■ lived there, the policeman in residence preferring a cosy outbuilding. There ■ glass in ■ of the windows for it had once been intended for a commissioner's residence but the boarding of the walls had warped and shrunk so that the wind whistled through the rooms, and I ■ obliged to put my pipe inside ■ boot before I could get it alight.

"Dat house is ■ healthy," said Yetto, "dat yo shiver all night."

There were other occupants on the evening of my arrival; a surly Syrian, with a flabby white face, grotesque in riding clothes. He was a Georgetown business man who had lately acquired ■ share in the ranch of an aged Brazilian negro and had been up to ■ to his interests; with him ■ ■ villainous looking, wizened little Brazilian *vaqueiro*.

"Dat ■ very cruel man. Him tie up de Indians all night and beat dem until Mr. Bain stop him."

The Syrian asked ■ of the ■ in Georgetown and then said "What about the war?"

I supposed he meant the threatened breach between Colombia and Venezuela and ■ gave ■ vague description of the situation. "No, no, ■ the ■ in Europe."



FIRST VIEW OF SAVANNAH FROM ANAI

"Unless it has broken [redacted] in the last fortnight there isn't [redacted] Who did you think [redacted] fighting."

"All of them. You know, Germany and Italy and Russia and France and so on. That [redacted] what I heard. One of the boys got it from a *vaqueiro* who had heard it [redacted] the wireless at Boa Vista." He sighed listlessly. "Well, I'm glad there's nothing in it. Not that it effects me much."

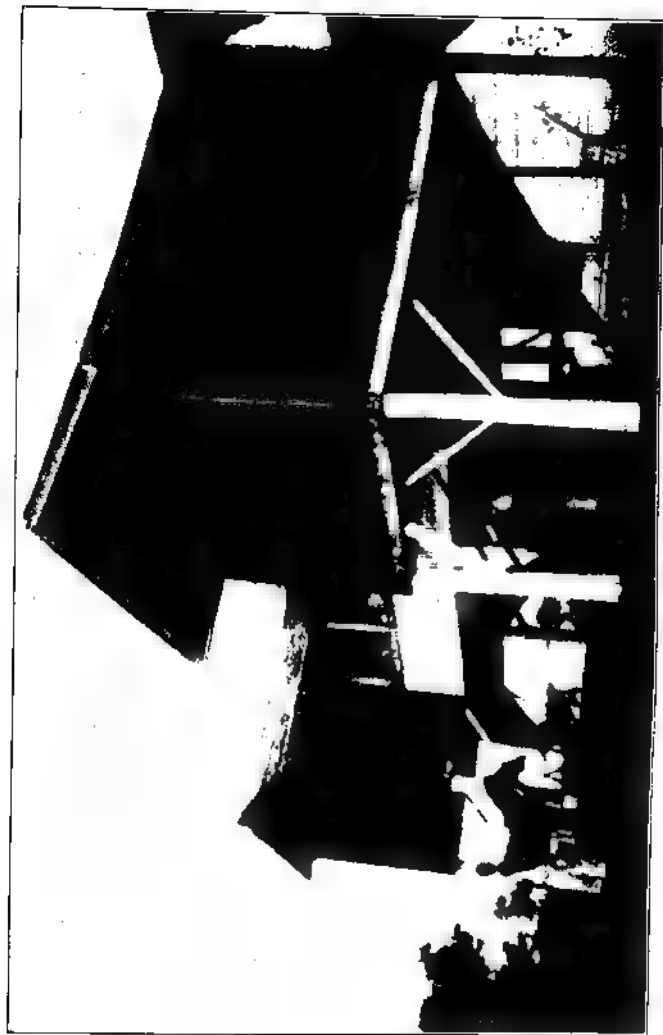
There [redacted] also a pleasant Spaniard named Orella and his wife coming down with a small drive of cattle. The wife [redacted] one of the daughters of Melville. They sent their love to the various relatives of theirs I should meet in the savannah, for, as I said earlier, almost every [redacted] of importance in the Rapununi has some tie with the Melville family. The Spaniard and I dined together, leaving the Syrian and his *vaqueiro* to another table.

Yetto's predictions about the healthiness of the place proved quite accurate. It was deadly cold after the soft, close nights of the forest.

Next day [redacted] full of incident. I had arranged for horses the night before; a pack horse from the policeman and a riding horse from the Indian who had followed [redacted] from Surana. At dawn they went out to catch them but it [redacted] two hours before they brought them in. The policeman's horse was a stocky little grey, the Indian's a fiery chestnut stallion, larger than most of the local animals and six times [redacted] lifelike. He [redacted] in stepping high and tossing his head and [redacted] a difficulty from the first. He shied away from any attempt to saddle him until [redacted] made the discovery that he was blind on the off side, having lately had his eye kicked in by a [redacted] whom his advances had been unwelcome.

The bridle altogether more difficult; he used to a bit and resisted by the simple expedient of rearing, striking out with his forefeet and throwing himself on his back. When he had done this twice, nearly braining the Indian and slewing his saddle rakishly under his belly, we gave up the idea of the bit and borrowed a Brazilian bridle with a barbed metal nose-piece. He took to that more kindly and length, the saddle readjusted, fretted restlessly from foot to foot, his single eye rolling in a challenging fashion, ready to be mounted. Mr. Orella who had been watching proceedings meditatively from the verandah gave it his opinion that this was a fresh horse. However he allowed him to mount and as soon as I was in the saddle off at a canter in the desired direction. After a mile he settled down to a brisk trot and I was able to enjoy the scenery and congratulate myself on my last having got a good ride.

The trail led along the foot of the hills, passed through them down a little valley and emerged again into the open grass land; there is usually a strong, blustering wind over the savannah. It was like being by the sea, to emerge into bright light and wide horizons after the twilight green tunnel through which we had passed. I jogged along in the happiest frame of mind; if I had known how to, I should have sung. Suddenly after about five miles the stallion stopped dead. I had no whip or spurs; I undid the leather hobble from his cheek strap and beat him; I kicked him as hard as I could. He stood four square and immovable. I thought something must be wrong with his harness, I dismounted and examined it; everything was in order. I tried to look at his mouth but nothing would induce him to lift a hoof from the



ANAI HOUSE. SINCLAIR WITH CHESTNUT STALLION

Facing page 82.

ground. I looked round for a stick but there was nothing in sight except sand and grass. I remounted and began the battle with heels and hobble. When I was practically exhausted he suddenly started off again and trotted another two miles. He was an odd horse. After two miles we reached a belt of bush; it was here, by a creek, that I had arranged to wait for the boys to catch up and cook breakfast. At the opening of the bush a thin log lay across the path. The stallion stopped again. The battle resumed, but here I had the advantage for I was able to break off a stick. The stallion's was the one unfailing expedient. Quite slowly he stood up on his hind legs and performed the back somersault that he had been practising at Anai that morning. With an agility which I did not think it likely I could ever repeat, I managed to clear of him. He rolled for a little, shedding a stirrup leather; struck out with all four feet hopefully but inaccurately; then quietly got up, stepped over the log and began cropping the bush on the other side.

What with the fight and the fall I was fairly exhausted and felt thankful that this was our stopping place. I tethered him, unsaddled him, found the missing leather and decided that in the afternoon I would ride the grey and see how the boys could manage with a pack saddle and the stallion.

I was deadly thirsty and went down to the creek for water. It was perfectly dry except for a fetid puddle. I got a certain ignoble consolation from thinking that probably the horse was thirsty too. Then I lit a pipe and waited.

Yetto was the first to come up and he immediately began on a story of Sinclair's misdoings that in my

present rather dizzy ■■■ was quite unintelligible. Its conclusion, anyway, ■■■ that Yetto and Price had left Sinclair with the pack horse and that Sinclair did not know the way. Presently Price ■■■ loping in. He told ■■■ the story about Sinclair but it still made ■■■ I ■■■ him and Yetto up and down stream to see if there was a pool anywhere fit to drink. They ■■■ back after an hour without having found anything. At last Sinclair and the pack horse arrived. He began ■■■ his story but I had not the patience for it. I said I would hear it that night; meanwhile I was far too thirsty to eat anything; he ■■■ to saddle the pack horse and put the pack ■■■ the chestnut. I was going straight on.

It was a painful ride, the first of many that were to follow. The heat was intense, glaring up off the earth so that my face was skinned under the shade of a broad-brimmed hat. Exhaustion was infectious; I felt it seeping up from the stumbling horse, seeping down into him from me. Constant urging ■■■ necessary to keep him at ■■■ trot. When he fell into a walk the dead hardness of the saddle was intolerable. Above all there was thirst. Later I had many longer and hotter days without water, but this ■■■ the first of them and I ■■■ fresh from the deep shade and purling creeks of the forest. The trail, clear enough in places, would sometimes dwindle and peter out among patches of dried sedge; then it ■■■ necessary to cast round in widening circles until I picked it up again after a loss of time and strength. Often it would split and divide into ■■■ equally prominent branches. Then it ■■■ a matter of guessing to decide on the route; sometimes I went wrong and found the track I had been following led only to ■■■ dried water hole; then again it ■■■ necessary

■ cast for the real trail. In this way I ■ have covered nearly double the real distance, when ■ about five in the afternoon, I arrived ■ my destination.

This was the ranch of a man named Christie. I knew nothing about him except what I had been told the previous evening; that he was very old and "very religious." His religion, I ■ warned, took the form that he did not participate in the open hospitality of the savannah. He allowed—he could scarcely have prevented it—passers-by to hobble their horses in his corral and sleep under his shelter, but that ■ the full extent of his goodwill. Most people, riding through, if they could rely on their horses, made ■ double stage of it and got through to Anai in ■ day; others hung their hammocks in the open by the creek where I had left Yetto and the boys. However there was no question of that for me; even if ■ had not had followers on foot, the horse could not have made any further effort; he was barely able to get so far. ■ had to risk the religious atmosphere and put up at Christie's.

Visibility is poor on the savannah by ■ of the "sand-paper" trees. These low shrubs, six or ten feet in height, ■ scattered loosely all over the country at intervals of twenty yards or so; sometimes they ■ thicker and from ■ distance give the impression of ■ copse, but when approached always resolve into isolated units; they throw almost ■ shade; their leaves ■ very rough ■ one side and it is from this peculiarity that they get their name; their wood is brittle and useless for any practical purpose. Their only good quality, that I was able to discover, was the element of surprise that they gave to travelling. In ■ countries one ■ the day's objective from the start; it is there in front

of one, hour after hour, mile after mile, just ■ remote, apparently, ■ noon as it had been at dawn; one's eyes dazzle with constant staring. The "sand-paper" trees often hid ■ house from view — particularly the low, dun houses of the district — until one ■■ practically inside it. Then there would be ■ sudden, exultant, ■ scarcely credulous, inward leap of delight ■ ■■ realised at the ■■ and almost desperate hour of the day, that one's distress ■■ over. Horse and I ■■ both unsteady with fatigue when ■ Indian home ■■ into view quite near us. Then another, with ■■ ■■ squatting in front. They ■■ in and hid ■ my approach but I rode up to the door and shouted into the darkness, making the motions of drinking. After ■■ giggling and nudging one of them brought me out ■ calabash of cold water. Then I said "Christie" and they repeated "Christie" and giggled ■■ more. Finally ■■ of them ■■ out and pointed in the direction I should take. Another twenty minutes brought ■■ to the ranch. It ■■ ■■ handful of huts, thrown out haphazard ■■ the ground like the waste stuff of a picnic party. There was ■■ ■■ about. I dismounted and walked round. The central and largest house was only half built but there ■■ another ■■ it with dilapidated thatch, open ■■ all sides, which ■■ distinguishable from the others by a plank floor, raised a couple of feet from the earth. Here, reclining in a hammock and sipping cold water from the spout of ■ white enamelled teapot, ■■ Mr. Christie.

He had ■ long white moustache and a white woolly head; his face was of the same sun-baked, fever-blanché colour ■ ■■ most faces in the colony but of unmistakable negro structure. It is illegal for blacks — or for that matter, whites, unless they get permission — to settle in

Indian country and I learned that for the first years so of his residence there had been repeated attempts by the government to evict him; after that they had let him be. I greeted him and asked where I could find my horse. He smiled in a dreamy, absent-minded manner and said, "I was expecting you. I was warned in a vision of your approach."

He climbed out of the hammock, looked about for shoes, found only one, and hobbled over to shake hands with me.

"I always know the character of any visitors by the visions I have of them. Sometimes I see a pig or a jackal; often a ravaging tiger."

I could not resist asking, "And how did you see me?"

"As a sweetly toned harmonium," said Mr. Christie politely.

He pointed out the tenuous straggle of footpath that led to the water hole. I took off saddle and bridle and led the horse down by his rope halter. He whinnied at the smell of water and we both drank immoderately; he was trembling in the legs and lathered in sweat but, I was glad to find, not galled. I sluiced him down, turned him into the corral, and left him happily rolling in the dust. Then I slung my hammock under a shelter near Mr. Christie's house and went to sleep until, two hours later, the rest of my party arrived. They had my change of clothes with them. As they arrived I got out of boots and breeches, had a bath and a mug of rum. I drank a lot of rum that evening; how much I did not realise until next morning when I discovered the empty bottle. Sinclair, knowing that there was a fever in the air, had picked a handful of limes on his way. He filled up the mug assiduously with rum and limes and brown

sugar and cold, rather muddy water. I did not investigate the boys' quarrel and Sinclair did not get the sack. The sweet and splendid spirit, the exhaustion of the day, its heat, thirst, hunger and the effects of the fall, the fantastic conversations of Mr. Christie, translated that evening and raised it ■ finger's breadth above reality.

The lamp stood on the floor in the middle of the shelter ■ that all the faces were illumined as faces ■ not meant to be seen; from below with cheek bones casting shadows across their eyes and strong light under the brows and chin and nostrils. Everyone in the vicinity ■ round to watch me eat supper. Mr. Christie stalked round and round the lamp telling me about God.

He asked ■ whether I were a "believer" and I said yes, a Catholic.

"There ■ ■ good Catholics," conceded Mr. Christie, "they are far from the truth but they ■ in the right direction. Only the other evening I was looking at the choir of the blessed singing before the throne of God and to my great surprise, I recognised the late Bishop of Guiana . . . but they take too much on themselves. Their ministers like to be called 'father.' There is only one 'Father' - the ■ above."

"Have you the ■ objection to children addressing their male parent in that way?"

"It is ■ terrible thing to be ■ male parent" - Mr. Christie had ■ large family by an Indian mistress - "Verily it is written" - and he quoted some text I cannot remember to the effect that children are ■ curse. "Why only the other day my eldest ■ begat ■ child by ■ ■ of ■ cultivation. He ■ speaks of marrying her."

"But living as you do out here in the savannah, is lack of cultivation ■ very serious matter?"

"It is very serious when she will not sing," said Mr. Christie severely.

We spoke of the uncle of some friends of mine who had worked in this district as a missionary and retired to England as the result of a complete breakdown.

"That man had the devil in him," said Mr. Christie. "Do you know what he did? He boiled a chicken in the place where I used to say my prayers. I have been there since. It defiled."

I told him that the priest had since recovered his health and was working on the South Coast.

"No, no, I assure you that the contrary is the case. He appeared to me the other night and all the time he spoke to me his head rolled about the floor in a most horrible manner. So I knew he was still mad."

Every Sunday he preached for four or five hours to the neighbouring Indians. I asked him whether his work among them was successful. "No, not successful, you could not call it successful. I have been here for thirty years and so far have made no converts at all. Even my family have the devil in them."

He told me that he was at work on a translation of the scriptures into Macushi, "but I have to change and omit a great deal. There is much I do not agree with . . . but I am not worried. I expect the end of the world shortly." Some years back he had seen a number flashed in the sky and that was the number of days remaining. I asked him how he knew that that was the meaning of the number.

"What else could it be?" he asked.

As I sat soaking rum he told of numerous visions. How when his mistress died he had heard a voice from heaven say, "The old horse is dead."

"It did not ██████ that she was like a horse. In some ways she ██████ very pretty. It meant no ██████ riding for me."

Lately he had been privileged to ██████ the total assembly of the elect in heaven.

"Were there many of them?"

"It ██████ hard to count because you ██████ they had no bodies but my impression is that there ██████ very few."

I asked if he believed in the Trinity. "Believe in it! I could not live without it. But the mistake the Catholics make is to call it a mystery. It is all quite simple to me." He told me how the Pope had had a French admiral murdered and his heart sent to Rome in a gold box; also that Freemasons stole bodies out of the cemetery and kept them in a cellar below every Lodge. You could always tell a Freemason, he said, because they had VOL branded ██████ their buttocks. "It means volunteer, I suppose," he said. "I can't think why."

Presently ██████ of the onlookers in the outer circle came into the hut and squatted down round the lamp. I had ██████ cocoa made and handed round. One of Mr. Christie's daughters had married a East Indian. The man put a naked child ██████ my knee and attempted to interest me in a ██████ he was having with the policeman ██████ Anai about illicit tobacco selling. It ██████ all a trumped-up charge, he said, the result of spite. But I ██████ not in the mood to follow his difficulties.

After a little I fell asleep and woke up to find the party still going ██████ and Mr. Christie still talking of visions and mystic numbers. When I next awoke they had all gone away, but I could hear Mr. Christie prowling round in the darkness outside and muttering ██████ himself.

CHAPTER IV

Daguar's ranch—Hart's ranch—St. Ignatius Mission—Figueiredo—the Boundary Commission.

NEXT day ■■■ easy going. I started early and did the twenty odd miles to the next ranch before midday. The first half of the ride ■■■ pleasantly cool, ■■■ of it ■■■ particularly disagreeable, for it is not until afternoon, when the ground has got hot, that the savannah becomes unendurable. When it is possible the *vaqueiros* stay under cover and sleep from ■■■ until three. The horse was tired after the bad time he had had the day before but he made the journey successfully, with ■ little pushing in the last five miles, at the regular four mile an hour savannah trot.

The ranch I ■■■ making for, was the property of ■ Georgetown Chinaman named Mr. Wong, who ■■■ one of Yetto's heroes ■■■ account of his reputation for high play at cards. The manager, to whom I had a note of introduction from Mr. Bain, was ■ Portuguese called d'Aguar ■ Da Guar ■ Daguar — opinion ■■■ the savannah differed about the spelling. Anyway he ■■■ ■ swarthy, genial man, with a well trained Indian mistress and a totally untrained little boy of repulsive habits. The ranch was of very simple nature, three wattle and mud huts in a wire enclosure, earth floored, thatch roofed; one of them with a small verandah just long enough to sling ■ hammock, but the enclosure ■■■ swept clean

daily and there ■ ■ garden beyond growing several sorts of vegetable. He was clever with his fingers and the ■■■ of the huts ■■■ hung with bridles and whips of plaited hide and ornamented saddles of his own making; most of the ranchers ■■ leather-workers during the wet ■■■■ when the plains ■■ water-logged, and the damp in the air makes the raw hide malleable. There was a certain swagger in Daguar's clothes, too; he had ■ big brimmed, leather bound Brazilian hat, large silver buckles down the sides of his leggings and ■ silver-hilted knife stuck into one of them; large spurs ■■■ strapped on to his bare, horny heels.

There were several pets, too; a grey monkey tied by his loins in the shade, a ■■■■ and two or three green parrots on the rooftop, a gentle, perfectly tame deer, which he had caught as a baby and gelded. There ■■■ some cigarette cards nailed upon the supports of the house. The child, though naked, had ■ immense length of black hair coiled in a bun like ■ orthodox priest's, ■■■ artificial toys, made in Germany and bought in Georgetown. The Indian girl had a heliotrope dress of ■ material that glittered like wet seaweed, which she hastened to put ■ in our honour ■■ my arrival. It ■■■ clearly a home ■■ which was expended exceptional pride and care.

I asked the way to wash and ■■■ shown a path through the vegetable garden into ■ belt of bush. I went down and, pushing through, suddenly found ■ sharp precipice at my feet and ■ dark, swift river of ■■■ breadth. It was unexpected and dramatic after the great stretch of arid savannah all round. On the opposite side there was the ■■■ clay cliff and a fringe of bush; that ■■ Brazil. I had not taken in — for the ranch ■■■ not marked ■■

the map — that I was already at the frontier and that this █████ the Ireng. I was to see plenty of this river later on and grow to hate it. At the time I did not like it for the descent was slippery and coming up, clean from one's bath, one █████ covered with clay █████ hands and knees; also because I █████ bitten by countless small flies; also because I found the first tick █████ my body. Later I grew to think nothing of them, but I found this first one repulsive with his head deep and tenacious in my flesh and his body swollen to the size of a pea. I burned him off and left the Ireng with some revulsion.

The bites itched all the afternoon. Daguar explained that the cabouri fly was troublesome in this district █████ in dry weather. In the rains it was impossible █████ go out of doors without gloves and a towel muffled round the head. They are odious little insects, █████ small that they easily penetrate any ordinary mosquito curtain; they breed in running water and attack in great numbers. Several books about the neighbourhood describe them █████ completely covering every exposed surface of the writer, █████ that █████ skin █████ visible █████ all. You cannot feel their bite until they have finished sucking; then they leave a little black spot behind them and a circle of burning flesh. But they █████ less formidable than the mosquito because, █████ far as is known, they do not carry fever, they will not bite through even the thinnest clothes, they █████ instantly dispersed by wind █████ darkness.

Insects played a fairly prominent part in my experience █████ throughout all this period. For the preceding week I had been discomforted by *bêtes rouges*, a minute red creature which brushes off the leaves of the bush █████ one's clothes and finds its way below one's skin where it causes unendurable itching. My █████ and legs were

covered with these in spite of crab oil and antiseptic soap and I scratched until I was ■■■■ I cured them temporarily at St. Ignatius but picked them up again ■■■■ I ■■■■ the move. It is quite accurate to say that in the weeks from leaving Kurupukari until some time after my final return to Georgetown, there ■■■■ not ■■■■ two-inch square on my body that ■■■■ not itching ■■■■ time of the day or night.

When the boys arrived I told Yetto to cook breakfast* but he said that Mrs. Daguar ■■■■ getting me some. Presently she brought it, a dish of fried eggs, minced tasso fried with herbs, bananas and delicious Brazilian coffee; she had china and cups and glasses and knives and forks and ■■■■ a tablecloth. I asked her how she became such ■■■■ excellent cook and she said she had worked for one of the Melvilles before she took up with Daguar. I had with me a number of Woolworth necklaces and bracelets which I had bought in London for barter and ■■■■ in ■■■■ doubt whether this woman ■■■■ too grand to like them. However, I tried ■■■■ the child and the mother was so evidently delighted that I gave another to her with complete success. That and ■■■■ glass of rum to Daguar put us all ■■■■ a very friendly basis and he volunteered to lend me another horse to take ■■■■ to Mr. Hart's, the ranch where I ■■■■ bound ■■■■ day.

A Portuguese family ■■■■ to call that afternoon with ■■■■ guitar which they played. They all came in and solemnly shook hands with me — about eight of them — ■■■■ arrival and on departure. (I suppose English people abroad must be constantly giving offence by not shaking hands often enough. It never occurs to us. I once

* Luncheon was always called breakfast in this country.

travelled in a French ship where every passenger shook every other passenger's hand every morning.)

Two wild-eyed, shaggy Patamona Indians also arrived in a canoe from upstream, trying to trade a monkey for some gunpowder, for Wong's ranch is at an extreme angle of the savannah, the nearest civilised spot to the Pakaraima district.

The boys spent the afternoon washing clothes and drying them in the sun. Yetto was still cheerful as usual but Price had got noticeably thinner since I first met him at Takama. He did not like his rations and he did not like walking and he did not like Sinclair. I think it was this last trouble that upset him more than anything. Half the bad feeling was because Sinclair took for himself and never shared out whatever was left over from my meals – and I noticed that he always prepared twice as much as I needed. But there were only two more days to Bon Success where I should be leaving all three of them and I did not propose to involve myself in their squabble.

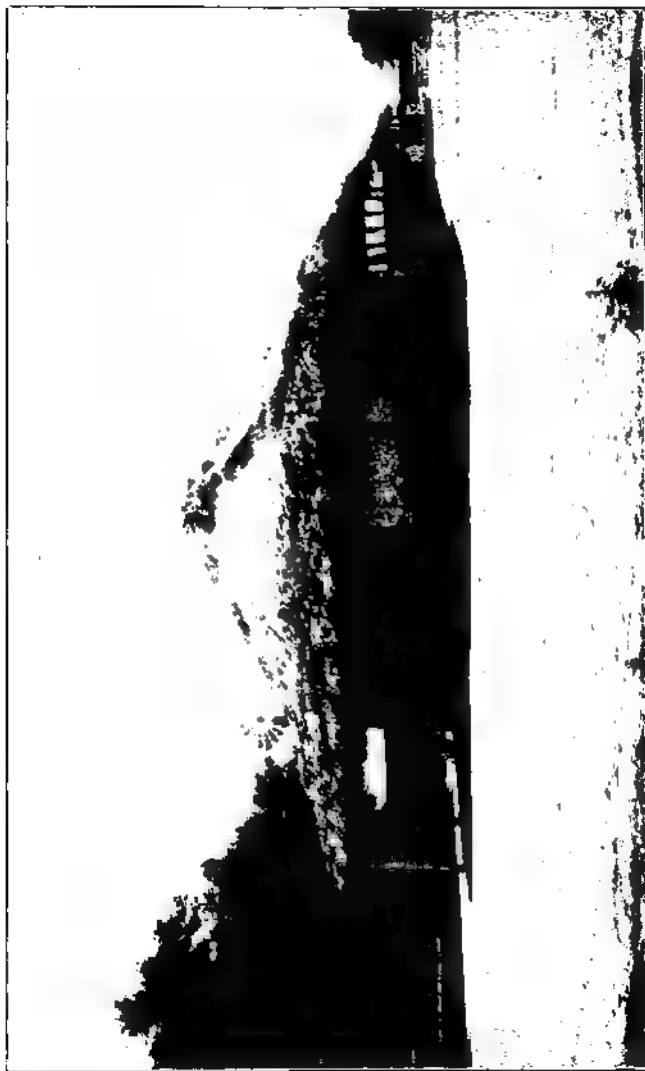
Next day a fresh horse and an early start brought me to Pirara by eleven in the morning. On the map a large lake is marked, called Amuku. I was surprised not to see this but learned that it had never existed. Schomburgk, the explorer, had camped there in the last century and found a patch of land temporarily inundated; the cartographers have copied it from one another.

The village of Pirara, on the other hand—another prominent feature of the map – did once exist, not indeed in recent memory but in reliable records. Now both Amuku and Pirara are bare savannah and the

Pirara ■ used of the ranch about five miles to the ■ of the place marked on the map, owned by Mr. Hart, an American married to another of the Melville daughters. It is ■ of the most imposing and important houses in the district, *the* most important next to Dadanawa. Its unique and most famous feature is ■ wind wheel which draws water and works ■ variety of machines in the workshop. This is ■ landmark all over the plain, though ■ my inexperienced eye it ■ indistinguishable from ■ palm tree except at the shortest range. It seriously worried me in fact, because Daguar had told me that I should see it from, at the very least, ten miles off and, not seeing it, I began to think that I ■ on the wrong trail, and fretted increasingly until at length, of the countless tall trees with circular summits one seemed outstandingly rigid and symmetrical and gradual approach revealed it as Mr. Hart's wind wheel.

Mr. Hart ■ still away — it was his disastrous drive whose ■ we had encountered all the way up the trail — but Mrs. Hart received ■ with the utmost kindness. She had ■ tumultuous family of ■ under the precarious control of ■ attractive, Creole governess in shorts; lithe and vital ■ an adolescent Josephine Baker. Their school hours seemed mostly spent in reciting the rosary and getting whipped.

The house, like all tropical houses, ■ a collection of separate buildings; the main ■ ■ shingle built, with floors, doors and ■ ceilings; ■ was given the schoolroom for my hammock; there ■ framed pictures on the walls, looking-glasses and several shelves of books. Across the yard ■ a shower bath. There ■ large fruit trees all round — mangos, soursap, grape-fruit, lemon and orange, breadfruit and custard apple; there



MR. HART'S RANCH AT PIRARA

■ ■ flower garden with pebble paths; there ■ ■ fresh pork for breakfast; ■ ■ sensational of all there ■ ■ motor truck standing outside, ■ unexpected and incongruous ■ object ■ it would have been in the Piazza at Venice. It ■ ■ the only mechanical vehicle between Georgetown and Manoa. It had belonged, I was told, to ■ German who had once been taken with the idea that crops up fruitlessly from time to time, of improving Boa Vista. After his rout Mr. Hart bought it and with infinite difficulty got it to Pirara. He could seldom afford ■ ■ it himself on account of the enormous price of benzine in the neighbourhood and indeed there were few directions in which it could have been driven. At the moment, however, it was doing service for the government in carrying Boundary Commission stores from their dump at Yupukarri to Bon Success.

I heard a good deal about this Boundary Commission and later ■ ■ into contact with part of it. Like all activities of Government it was, no doubt unjustly, ■ of the jokes of the colony. It is notorious that South American States ■ in frequent conflict about inaccessible bits of territory. At the beginning of this century Brazil claimed the whole of the Rupununi savannah, while there was very nearly ■ between Great Britain and Venezuela ■ the North-West frontier. Arbitrators ■ able to avert hostilities in both cases, but the boundaries ■ defined by them remained vague, ■ they were plotted ■ blank ■ conjectural maps in reference to hills ■ rivers that had ■ been surveyed and whose existence ■ in ■ cases ■ only assumed from Indian report. A joint commission of the ■ involved had accordingly gone out ■ survey and demarcate the frontiers, to find which of the ■ confluent streams of the Takutu

and Courantyne were in fact the rivers and which the tributaries, whether the brown patches marked all the maps as Akarai Mountains corresponded to any real geographical feature, and other disputed points that could only be decided by first hand investigation. The Brazilians had been led to expect a detachment of Royal Engineers and suffered some disappointment and resentment, it was freely said in the colony, when, the two parties having painfully converged and established contact, they discovered a number of local surveyors racially representative of the mixed population of Georgetown. The Commission had been at work for some time, but had so far only surveyed the single section of the line that was already accurately known; their main achievement to date was the division of Mount Roraima, where the British, Brazilian and Venezuelan boundaries meet, so that the colony was left with only a precipitous face of bare rock, and the brass plate erected by Lady Clementi to commemorate her visit there, became foreign property. Their activities however had necessitated a good deal of moving of stores and consequent recruiting of labour from villages hitherto untouched by civilisation, with the result that wages in the form of celluloid combs, printed cottons, and even gramophones were to be found in unlikely places. There was also the secondary effect, much complained of by the ranchers that labour was scarce, for the Indians only come out to work when they need a specific object, usually a gun or ammunition, and could subsist happily on the glut of government stores for months to

As I have mentioned there were books in Pirara—a curious library, much ravaged by ants, filled, like the

boxes outside secondhand booksellers', with works on every conceivable subject, hygiene, carpentry, religion, philosophy, and among them a number of fairly recent best-sellers left presumably from time to time by passing travellers. As I was looking through them I came upon a local mission magazine in which were extracts from the diaries of Father Carey-Elwes, the priest who had first penetrated into the Indian villages of the border and hill country. Two days dealt with the writer's first acquaintance with Mr. Christie many years before, and I was enchanted to discover a description corresponding almost exactly to my own experience; enchanted and somewhat relieved, for in the last two days I had begun to doubt whether the whole of that fantastic evening had not been an illusion born of rum and exhaustion. One anecdote seemed to me so delightful that I cannot forbear to repeat it. At the end of his stay Father Carey-Elwes offered his host one of the medals of Our Lady which he carried for distribution among his converts. The old man studied it for a moment and returned it saying (I quote from memory), "Why should I require an image of I see so frequently? Besides, it is an exceedingly poor likeness."

Next day's journey lay through Bon Success where Mr. Teddy Melville lived; he is one of Mrs. Hart's brothers and holds the government rank of Ranger. She had not met him for some time and accordingly kindly offered to drive me there in the motor van. Sinclair and Price were by now visibly exhausted by their unwonted exercise and comparatively easy as my journey had been, I too had grown tired in the successive wearying days on horseback, the continuous saddling

and bridling, watering and grooming, the early [redacted] to avoid the heat of the day, the stiff and sticky wait until the [redacted] of the party arrived with soap and change of clothes — [redacted] I gratefully accepted her offer.

Daguar's horse and the stallion — somewhat sobered by now — were to be called for by Yetto and Sinclair [redacted] their return journey. There is a casualness in the rancher's treatment of horses, other than their [redacted] favourite mounts, that at first seemed surprising after the exaggerated importance with which they are treated in England. Very few people on the savannah could tell you exactly how many horses they possessed [redacted] where they were. At the annual round-ups they [redacted] identified by their brands, sorted out and taken home. For the rest of the time they wander at pasture, often straying twenty [redacted] thirty miles. Borrowed horses are left about and fetched when needed like books in England. Of course a horse in that country is worth about a tenth of its price in England. One [redacted] buy a reasonably strong eight-year-old pony for five pounds [redacted] less.

We did the twenty miles or so to Bon Success in a third of the time it would have taken by horse but during that time the going [redacted] incomparably rougher. Mrs. Hart, a son, the driver and myself [redacted] the wooden [redacted] in front; the boys lay with the luggage behind and [redacted] all thrown up and down and from side to side [redacted] the [redacted] jolted over the grass beside the trail. Ground that seemed smooth enough on foot was scarcely passable [redacted] wheels. [redacted] soon realised why [redacted] else thought it worth while investing in a car. There [redacted] considerable creeks [redacted] get through. We had [redacted] cut dried wood and lay a way [redacted] them, then haul the [redacted] up the opposite bank with chain and pulleys.



FATHER MATHER AT ST. IGNATIUS MISSION

But ■ got ■ Bon Success well before ■ and breakfasted with Teddy Melville and his enchanting little Brazilian wife. We slept for ■ hour and then drove ■ up the course of the Takutu another two miles to St. Ignatius, where I was to spend ten days as the guest of Father Mather, the kindest and most generous of all the hosts of the colony.

He was at work in his carpenter's shop when we arrived and came out to greet us, dusting the shavings off his khaki shirt and trousers, and presenting ■ complete antithesis of the "wily Jesuit" of popular tradition. Like all his Society, Father Mather is a self-effacing man and ■ think he would not relish any further personal description. He is a skilled and conscientious craftsman; everything he does from developing films to making saddles, is done with patient accuracy. Most of the simple furniture of the living-room was his work — firm, finely jointed and fitted, delicately finished, ■ marked contrast to the botched, makeshift stuff that prevailed ■ in Georgetown. He loves and studies all natural things, in particular woods and birds about which he has huge stores of first-hand knowledge. It is very rarely that he goes down to the coast; when he does the river-side scenery — to ■ unendurably monotonous — provides ■ luxurious orgy of observation; occasionally some call will take him into the hills, but for the most part his work keeps him in the desolate surroundings of St. Ignatius, and his researches are confined to the insects that collect round his reading-lamp in the evenings.

I paid off Yetto, Sinclair and Price and they went away, Price to the station ■ Bon Success, Yetto and Sinclair back down the trail, for blacks ■ not encouraged ■ stay long among the Indians. Before they left they

each asked to be photographed and in turn Yetto's old cloth cap and Price's spotted handkerchief for their portraits. Mrs. Hart had tea, chatted for an hour and drove off. The first phase of the journey over.

All the time I in Guiana I found myself remarking the contrast it offered to Africa. St. Ignatius was very unlike the missions I had seen there — the crowded compounds, big school houses with their of woolly black heads patiently absorbing "education"; the solid presbyteries and packed, devout congregations; the native priests and nuns, methodical in white linen and topees; the troops of black children veiled for their first Communion; the plain chant and the examination papers. It was as lonely an outpost of religion as you could find anywhere. If it had not been for the Calvary the river-bank, it might have been one of the smaller ranches. It was, in fact, a ranch also, for without cattle no one can live on the savannah; and the head *vaqueiro* was later to prove of the greatest service to me. Like all the savannah houses it was invisible from quite a short distance. The main building made of wattle mud, thatch, timber and corrugated iron; a home far smaller and less imposing than Pirara Anai, but, unlike them, distinguished by a second storey with a gallery of loose planks running the length of it. The walls of the upper short of the and the high savannah wind swept and eddied through them, while the timbers swayed and creaked and the thatch and iron above seemed to heave and belly, so that at night one felt as though were at in a sailing ship. Downstairs there was a single small living-room, a kitchen, and store-rooms; above there were not only

bedrooms but, in ■ of them, ■ iron bedstead, mattresses, and pillow, where I was put ■ sleep. This, ■ bright reading lamp, bread and pure English conversation ■ luxuries I found here which I had greatly missed on the journey up.

Near the house ■ a small church built of tin and thatch and furnished with ■ few benches six inches high from the mud floor; it ■ open at the west end for light and ventilation, and in spite of every discouragement and ■ barrier of wire netting, ■ hen used regularly ■ lay her eggs behind the altar. Some way from the church stood Father Mather's workshop where every kind of odd job in leather, iron and wood ■ brilliantly performed. Further away still was a little shelter used as a school house for a dozen or so Indian children who appeared irregularly to learn from ■ kindly Indian teacher. There ■ several Indian houses scattered within a mile's radius of the mission who kept a close liaison with it. There was a wired corral and ■ *vaqueiros'* hut. There was a large, slightly dilapidated barn where visiting Indians put up.

Here Father Mather lived quite alone for the greater part of the year. Another priest, Father Keary, used the home ■ his headquarters but except in the wet weather he ■ continually on circuit among the villages. Father Mather kept the home going and managed the ranch and stores; he attended to the Indians in the immediate vicinity and dispensed medicines and first aid. Most of the ranchers on the British side, and all the Brazilians ■ Catholics and he saw to their needs, baptising and marrying and burying them. He repaired the boats and harness and the fabric of the house. He had once been desperately ■ from fever and had frequent

slighter recurrences; he had constant toothache for he two hundred miles from the nearest dentist; he of the happiest men I met in the country.

I have often observed that the servants of the religious are, as a class, of abnormally low mentality. I do not know why this should be — whether it is that good people in their charity give jobs to those whom one else will employ, whether, being poor, they get them cheap, or whether they welcome inefficient service as a mortification, or whether unremitting association with people of superior virtue eventually drives servants off their heads. Whatever the explanation, that is usually the state of affairs. Father Mather's establishment, however, an exception. It is true that there was an idiot Macushi boy who constantly obtruded a moon face round the door at meal-times, asking for tobacco, but he was employed only on casual labour outside the house. The two Indian widows who cooked, wove hammocks, drove the guinea fowl out of the bedrooms and generally "did for us" were exemplary people. So David Max y Hung, the head *vaqueiro* mentioned above. This pious and efficient young spoke two Indian languages, English and Portuguese, perfectly. He was half Chinese, half Arawak Indian and his wife was Brazilian. He away at a round-up the time of my arrival (every ranch sends a representative to every round-up to identify his own cattle and see that there is no tampering with the brands) and it was his absence that prolonged my stay so pleasantly, for the first evening Father Mather explained to me that it quite hopeless to think of reaching Boa Vista by that season. It was easy, however, to ride there, and on David's return I could have horses and David himself

for ■ guide. So I stayed on, glad of the rest and learning hourly from Father Mather ■ about the country, for ■ week until David returned, and a final three days while horses ■ being got in and baggage repacked.

They ■ peaceful and delightful days. Mass ■ in the little church where sometimes half ■ dozen Indians would appear, always the school teacher and the idiot boy; then coffee; then Father Mather would go off to his workshop and I would sit and read in ■ long chair in the windswept gallery or make tracings from maps at the table downstairs. There were ■ quantity of maps of varying value, mostly roughly sketched plans of journeys in the hills and round the savannah, and gradually I was able to correct my official map until it had some semblance of accuracy. Breakfast at noon and then Father Mather returned to his business. At sundown we used to go down to the river to wash (one does not do much swimming in these rivers because they are full of dangerous creatures — sting ray, electric eels and carnivorous fish); supper at seven, and after supper we smoked and talked until bedtime about Guiana or England while Father Mather sorted out photographs or insects ■ feathers. During these evenings I learned to cut up, consume and eventually ■ to enjoy the pungent black tobacco of the district.

There were pets, of course; ■ misanthropic and rather menacing "bush turkey" which strutted about the gallery, shaking his scarlet dewlap; two toucans with vast, disproportionate beaks, shaped and coloured like toys; they used to appear at meal times and catch pieces of bread with astonishing accuracy; if neglected they asserted their presence by pecking one sharply in the leg. There ■ ■ mischievous little mocking-bird

who upset everything and ■ whom I became particularly attached; he ■ killed by ■ during my stay. There ■ also ■ huge toad who inhabited the house, though he ■ scarcely be described as ■ pet; he had quarters behind ■ kerosene tin and woke up ■ sunset with ■ series of deep barks; he ■ appeared except by lamplight when he would ■ out, flopping along heavily; he had ■ unaccountable taste for burning cigarette ends which he would snap up and swallow with ■ insatiable appetite.*

There were ■ few callers because the mission lay ■ the cattle trail to Dadanawa and it is uncivil in that district to pass any house without stopping to greet the inhabitants. The manager of the company's ranch came to coffee one morning. He ■ riding ■ fine, corn fed horse, and habitually did the journey from Bon Success to Dadanawa in one day. On another occasion Mr. Gore, the next neighbour up the trail passed us with a drove of cattle and stopped for supper. He had had ■ wandering life and told stories of the Yukon gold rush, but he had now married an Indian and settled in the Rupununi for good. Teddy Melville came by with ■ ostentatiously armed policeman, ■ his way to investigate ■ story of "pork knockers" in Indian territory beyond Wichabai. And besides ■ formal visitors there ■ usually a dozen or ■ nondescript strangers hanging about the house. Some ■ Brazilians, in ■ out of jobs, ■ calling on relatives at ranches this side of the border; others ■ Indians ■ to trade, bringing in pelts, honey, farine, game ■ fish to exchange for cloth

* I mentioned this phenomenon later to Mr. Winter, who told me he ■ once seen a toad eat a burning cigar end outside an hotel in Georgetown but that no one would ever believe him.

■ shot. There was ■ any bargaining with these traders. They took what they were offered with completely impassive faces. Usually Father Mather led them into the store and let them see what he had. They could go on choosing until they had made up the value of what they had brought. Occasionally they would have taken all that attracted them before they had exhausted their credit. Then they would make ■ though to go and he would force ■ further object on them. They would take it listlessly like everything else, and drift away to their homes. Sometimes there were Indians with injuries ■ illnesses asking for medical attention. Sometimes they had no apparent motive in their visit but had come for ■ few days' gossip, or were halting ■ ■ journey, moved invisibly like the tides, on some unexplained, pointless errand.

The life of the Brazilian frontier must, I should think, be unique in the British Empire. In its whole length from Mount Roraima to the Courantyne—a distance of about five hundred miles—Bon Success is the only British government station, and that is under the admirable management of Mr. Melville, who is half Indian by birth and married to ■ Brazilian. On the other side there is no representative of law nearer than Boa Vista. There is ■ comic *Beachcomber* administrator dressing at night for dinner and whistling his old school song ■ the colours are lowered at sunset; there ■ ■ flags, ■ military, no customs, no passport examinations, no immigration forms. The Indians have probably very little idea of whether they ■ on British or Brazilian territory; they wander to and fro ■ the border exactly as they did before the days of Raleigh.

Throughout the whole district, too, there is only one shop and that is in ■■■ parts, half in Brazil and half in British Guiana. The proprietor is ■ Portuguese named Mr. Figuiredo. He lives immediately opposite Mr. Melville and he takes good ■■■ to keep his dealings strictly legal. On his own side of the river he sells things of Brazilian origin, hardware, ammunition, alcohol in various unpalatable forms, sugar and *farine*, ■ few decayed looking tins of fruit and sweets, tobacco, horses, saddlery and second-hand odds and ends extorted from bankrupt ranchers; on the British side he sells things brought up from Georgetown, mostly male and female clothing, soaps and hair oils, for which the more sophisticated Indians have ■ quite unsophisticated relish, and brands of patent medicines with engraved, pictorial labels and unfamiliar names — "Radways Rapid Relief," "Canadian Healing Oil," "Lydia Pynkham's Vegetable Product." If a Brazilian wants anything from the British side he and Mr. Figuiredo paddle across the river and he buys it there; and vice versa. Any guilt of smuggling attaches to the customer.

Father Mather and I went to breakfast with Mr. Figuiredo ■■■ day. He gave us course after ■■■ of food — stewed *tasso* with rice, minced *tasso* with *farine*, fresh beef with sweet potatoes, fresh pork, fried eggs, bananas, tinned peaches and ■■■ de Cacao of local distillation. His women folk ■■■ made to stand outside while we ate, with the exception of ■■ handsome daughter who waited. After breakfast ■■ went into the shop and Mr. Figuiredo made an effortless and ■■■ barrassing transition from host ■ shopkeeper, climbing behind the counter and arguing genially about the price of coffee. He has ■ competition within two hundred

miles and his prices ■ enormous; many ranchers pay their wage bill in chits on his store; even allowing for the expense and risk of transport his profits must be exceptional, but he lives in ■ very simple fashion, dressing always in an old suit of pyjamas and employing his family ■ do the work of the house. His ambition is ■ ■ enough to leave Brazil altogether and retire to Portugal.

Once or twice Father Mather and I paid visits to neighbouring Indians, but ■ these comparatively civilised people were very elusive; ■ one little group of houses all the men were away ■ a hunting expedition; at another the whole population had migrated to their cassava fields in the hills. Those ■ met were intensely shy except for one elderly woman who ■ reputed to be a "piai woman."* She had an old felt hat, long straggling hair and a filthy calico dress; her upper lip was tattooed with a blue moustache. She was extremely friendly, kissed our hands and gave us ■ calabash of home brewed liquor.

After ■ week David returned from the roundup—suave, spectacled, faultlessly efficient—and took ■ the arrangements for my journey to Boa Vista. The ranches ■ the other side lay along the banks of the Takutu and the Rio Branco; this, though circuitous, was the normal route which could be done in five or six days. It ■ possible, however, to travel direct ■ the savannah in three days and, to David's unexpressed regret, I decided to do this. My luggage was ■ reduced to ■ rucksac and a canvas grip, ■ that its transport presented no serious difficulty. I was assured of ample provisions ■ Boa Vista and for the short crossing

* Witch.

would take the luck of the country. Father Mather added bread and chocolate. On the morning of ■■■ departure he made ■■■ two presents, typical of him and of the country. I had casually mentioned, early in my stay, that I wished I had brought with me ■■■ kind of ■■■ for my ■■■. Later I noticed him measuring it but did not know the ■■■ until he appeared with ■ perfectly fitting case, covered with deer skin and lined with flannel, on ■ foundation of galvanised iron; there ■■■ ■■■ a waterproof envelope for it kept in place by ■ band cut from ■ old bicycle tyre. He also gave ■■■ two pieces of rare local wood shaped up for conversion into walking sticks, gummed over and wrapped in waterproof paper to protect them from damage.

David's Brazilian brother-in-law Francisco joined us; the luggage was divided – unequally, for I took only hammock, blanket and change of clothes – between our three horses. Then after breakfast on February 1st, ■■■ set off for the border. The sun was obscured and ■ light drizzle of rain was falling.

CHAPTER V

Brazilian savannah—amenities of Boa Vista—attempts to improve Boa Vista—"the company"—Father Alcuin—Mr. Steingler—the boundary commissioner—horse-dealing—the Prior—escape from Boa Vista.

THE ford was about three miles upstream from St. Ignatius. As I have said, there were no formalities of any sort in crossing the boundary; our horses waded through the shallow water, stretching forward to drink; half way over we were in Brazil. A lurch and scramble up the opposite bank; we forced our way through the fringe of bush, leaning low in the saddle to guard our faces from the thorn branches; then we were out into open country again, flat and desolate as the savannah we had left; more desolate, for here there was no vestige of life; no cattle track, no stray animals; simply the empty plain; sparse, colourless grass; ant-hills; sand-paper trees; an occasional clump of ragged palm; grey sky, gusts of wind, and a dull sweep of rain.

We rode on until sunset, Francisco in front showing the way, then myself; at the back David who had chosen the worst horse. I never saw anyone take so much trouble with his horse as Francisco. Every few miles he would dismount, slacken the girths and peer under his saddle for signs of galling. Brazilian saddles are built on a wooden frame, padded with straw like the packing of wine bottles. He had a ragged blanket

below the ■■■■ which he would repeatedly shake ■■■■ and refold. I got impatient ■■■■ these frequent stops but Francisco proved right in the end for he ■■■■ the only ■■■■ of ■■■■ who got his horse to Boa Vista with ■■■■ whole back.

At sunset the horses raised their heads and quickened their pace. It ■■■■ intensely dark and ■■■■ could only follow by the creaking of the harness ahead. At length we ■■■■ to ■■■■ stop and ■■■■ blacker darkness in front proved ■■■■ be ■■■■ *vaqueiros*' out-station. Francisco and David called out in Portuguese and ■■■■ presently answered by ■■■■ man's voice. Some minutes later ■■■■ very small light appeared in the hands of ■■■■ small boy. It revealed ■■■■ typical thatched shelter with mud floor and breast-high mud walls, of the sort to which I had by now grown accustomed; also an elderly ■■■■ who came out to shake our hands. In the shadows were half ■■■■ dozen hammocks whose occupants peered at us and rolled over again to sleep. A second light glowed dimly beyond, in ■■■■ room where the women had been roused to make us ■■■■ supper. Francisco and David led off the horses to water at ■■■■ near-by creek; the small boy dragged out a box for ■■■■ to sit on; finding I could not speak Portuguese the elderly ■■■■ contented himself by sitting astride his hammock and staring at me gloomily. After about ■■■■ minutes the boy brought ■■■■ ■■■■ minute cup of black coffee, thick and sweet, ■■■■ coffee is always made in the countries that grow and understand it. There was ■■■■ table at ■■■■ side of the room, built on piles driven into the floor; when David and Francisco returned the man motioned ■■■■ to draw up our boxes and sit there; the lamp stood in the centre. It consisted of a little bowl of beef fat with a couple of inches of wick hanging over



MIDDAY HALT AT DRY CREEK ■■■■■ SAVANNAH. DAVID AND FRANCISCO
UNSADDLING

Facing page 113

the edge and giving a smoky, orange flame. A woman brought in a tin pot of stewed *tasso* and another of *farine*. We had plates, knives and forks. David and Francisco helped themselves liberally. I attempted, in politeness, to eat a little but found it impossible to swallow. David, with an explanation to the host of this curious English taste, produced the bread. I soaked a slice in the tasteless, greasy water of the stew and ate it. Later when the others were in their hammocks I supplemented this meagre dinner with some of Father Mather's chocolate.

The thatch above our heads was very old and partially rotten. Even in the flickering light of the dip we could see moving across it the shadows of lizards and huge spiders; presumably it was also full of scorpions. Its reek was overpowering—a mixture of wet spaniel and turnip fields, so pungent that for hours I could not sleep and even contemplated taking my hammock outside and looking for other shelter under the trees. Eventually, however, I lost consciousness and was awakened at grey dawn by David to say that the horses were saddled and that we had a long day in front of us.

It proved to be by far the hardest day I had yet done. The rain had passed over and the sun came up, blinding and burning; there was a strong wind. With two brief halts we rode steadily until half an hour before sunset. Two hours after our start we stopped at an Indian house to make tea and eat some dry bread. After that, until evening, we got no water. The stream where we stopped was dry except for a few thick puddles, good enough for washing down the horses but not fit for drinking. Without water, I found, we lost all appetite for food, and I left the stale bread and tinned sausage

untouched in my pocket.* All through the blazing afternoon I found that I thought of nothing except drinking. I told myself very simple stories which consisted of my walking ■ the bar of my club and ordering one after another frosted glasses of orange juice; I imagined myself at a plage, sipping ice-cold lemon squashes under a striped umbrella, beside translucent blue water. I constructed "still lives" of bottles and syphons, glass goblets of bitter Hereford cider, jugs of peaches soaking in hock and champagne, even effervescing tumblers of liver salts. It ■■■ interesting that the drinks I thought of were nearly all fruity — ■■ foaming tankards of ale or cellar-cool wine.

At last that day, like all others, came to an end. When I was unsteady in the saddle with exhaustion and the sun lay low and straight in our eyes, ■■ ■■■ to ■ flowing creek and a hut beyond it. The horses could not be got past the water, ■■ had ■■ any inclination to urge them. We drank mug after mug of the cold stream and then, very stiffly, climbed up the bank to greet our host, ■ curly-headed half-caste. As he ■■■ bringing out the inevitable *farine* and *tasso*, I slung my hammock; sat down in it to wait; lay down, and awoke in my clothes eleven hours later to find dawn breaking and the horses already saddled.

The next ■■ days ■■■ easy going and uneventful except for our passing a black jaguar and ■■ ant bear. The jaguar was ■ mere shadow, slipping away from ■■ in the distance; I did not learn until later that it ■■ a

* For some reason no one travels with water in this country; chiefly I suppose because every ounce of ■■■ is considerable, and also because at most times in the year this place is well watered. Anyway the pint or so of tepid liquid which one could have taken in a ■■■ ■■■ have been negligible against the thirst of twelve hours in the sun.

■ of some rarity. The ■ bear, though common enough, ■ vastly more impressive, like something from ■ earlier phase of creation; the size and colour of an Irish wolf-hound with ■ absurdly attenuated nose, and a tail ■ long ■ itself, curled and feathery; it loped along lethargically within ■ few yards of us, either oblivious ■ indifferent ■ ■ approach.

We had ■ reached the inhabited Rio Branco district and ■ slept at a large ranch house, distinguished by ■ primitive sugar mill, round which an ■ plodded ■ the constant shouting of an Indian boy. A rich smell of toffee arose from the copper cauldrons. The process resulted in stone-hard cakes of candy, one of which ■ presented to each of us on leaving and happily gnawed up by David and Francisco. The proprietor dispensed patriarchal hospitality to twenty or more strangers and workmen. We dined in three shifts, the company waiting patiently on benches to take the first vacant place at the table; they were of all races and ranks, including a one-eyed negro, a deaf and dumb Indian, and an elegant young ■ in imitation silk pyjamas who hiccupped extravagantly. The fare ■ the usual *farine* and *tasso*, enriched with milk and treacle. David did all the conversation necessary at these visits, performing greetings and introductions and expressing ■ thanks with infinite courtesy and giving ■ impression of such distinction that, here, we ■ allowed to sling ■ hammocks in the verandah of the house instead of in the crowded shed outside. On the fourth day we reached the bank of the Rio Branco at ■ empty hut immediately opposite Boa Vista.

Since the evening at Kurupukari when Mr. Bain had

first mentioned its name, ■■■ Vista had come to assume greater and greater importance to ■■■ Father Mather had only been there once, and then in the worst stage of malignant malaria, ■■ that he had been able to tell me little about it except that some German nuns had proved deft and devoted nurses. Everybody else, however, and particularly David, had spoken of it ■■ a town of dazzling attraction. Whatever I had looked for in vain ■■ Figueiredo's store was, he told me, procurable at "Boa Vist'"; Mr. Daguar had extolled its modernity and luxury — electric light, cafés, fine buildings, women, politics, murders. Mr. Bain had told of the fast motor launches, plying constantly between there and Manaus. I had come to regard it as Middle Western Americans look on Paris, ■■ Chekov peasants on St. Petersburg. In the discomfort of the journey there, I had looked forward to the soft living of Boa Vista, feeling that these asperities were, in fact, ■■ suitable contrast, preparing my senses for a fuller appreciation of the good things in store. So confident ■■■ I that when we first ■■■ in sight of the ramshackle huddle of buildings ■■ the further bank, I ■■■ quite uncritical and conscious of ■■ emotion except delight and expectation.

The river ■■■ enormously broad and very low; ■■ low that ■■ ■■ gazed at the town ■■■ sand dunes and channels and a fair sized island it seemed to be perched ■■ a citadel, instead of being, ■■ was actually the case, at the ■■■ dead level as the rest of the plain. Two *vaqueiros* were lying in hammocks by the bank, and from these David elicited the information that ■■ boat ■■■ expected ■■■ time in the ■■■ few hours to ferry them ■■■ There was a corral by the hut into which we turned the horses; then we carried the saddles and

baggage down the precipitous path to the water's edge and settled ourselves to wait. The *vaqueiros* studied ■■■ with ■■ air that ■■■ to recognise as characteristic of Boa Vista; it ■■■ utterly unlike the open geniality of the ranches; conveying, ■■ it did, in equal degrees, contempt, suspicion and the suggestion that only listlessness preserved ■■ from active insult.

With David's assistance, I began some inquiries about accommodation. There ■■■ none, they said.

"But I understood there were two excellent hotels."

"Ah, that ■■■ in the days of the Company. There ■■■ all kinds of foolishness in the days of the Company. There is nowhere now. There has not been an hotel for two years."

"Then where do strangers stay?"

"Strangers do not come to Boa Vist'. If they come on business, the people they have business with put them up."

I explained that I was on the way to Manaus and had to wait for a boat. They showed complete indifference, only remarking that they did not know of any boat to Manaus. Then ■■■ of them added that possibly the foreign priests would do something for ■■■ — unless they had left; last time he ■■■ in Boa Vist' the foreign priests were all sick; most people were sick in Boa Vist'. Then the two ■■■ started talking to each other, with the obvious desire of terminating our conversation.

My enthusiasm had already cooled considerably by the time ■■■ a boat put out from the opposite shore and make slowly towards us. The ■■■ of the boat had business at the ranch ■■ our side and made ■■ difficulty about lending it. We all got in, his boy, David, Francisco, I, the two surly *vaqueiros*, the saddles

and the baggage, so that ■■■ gunwales ■■■ only ■■ inch clear of the water. Then partly paddling, partly wading and pushing, ■■ made our way ■■■■ There ■■■■ squatting ■■ the further shore, pounding dirty linen ■■ the rocks ■■ the water's edge. We hauled our possessions up the steep bank and found ourselves in the main street of the town. It ■■■ very broad, composed of hard, ■■■■ mud, cracked into wide fissures in all directions and scored by several dry gulleys. On either side was ■■ row of single-storied, whitewashed mud houses with tiled roofs; at each doorstep ■■ ■■ ■■ more of the citizens staring at us with eyes that ■■■ insolent, hostile and apathetic; a few naked children rolled about at their feet. The remains of ■■ overhead electric cable hung loose from ■■ ■■ of crazy posts, or lay in coils and loops about the gutter.

The street ■■■ to a slight hill and half-way up we came to the Benedictine Mission. This at any rate presented ■■ more imposing aspect than anything I had seen since leaving Georgetown. It ■■■ built of concrete with ■■ modestly ornamented facade, a ■■■ of unbroken glass windows, ■■ carved front door with ■■ electric bell, ■■ balustraded verandah with concrete ■■■ at either end; in front of it lay a strip of garden marked out into symmetrical beds with brick borders.

We approached rather diffidently for ■■ ■■■ shabby and stained with travelling and lately unaccustomed ■■ carved front doors and electric bells. But the bell need have caused us ■■ misgiving for it ■■■ out of order. We pressed and waited and pressed again. Then ■■ head appeared from ■■ window and told us, in Portuguese, ■■ knock. We knocked several times until the head reappeared; it ■■■ Teutonic in character, blond and

slightly bald, wrinkled, with a prominent jaw and innocent eyes.

"The gentleman is a stranger too. He speaks Portuguese in a way I do not understand," said David. "He says there is a priest but that he is probably out."

I was used to waiting by now, and sat on the doorstep among our luggage until presently an emaciated young monk in white habit appeared up the garden path. He seemed to accept my arrival with resignation, opened the door and led me in to one of those rooms only found in religious houses, shuttered, stuffy and geometrically regular in arrangement; four stiff chairs ranged round four walls; devotional oleographs symmetrically balanced; a table in the exact centre with an embroidered cloth and a pot of artificial flowers; everything showing by its high polish of cleanliness that nuns had been at work there.

The monk was a German-Swiss. We spoke in halting French and I explained my situation. He nodded gloomily and said that it was impossible to predict when another boat would leave for Manaos; on the other hand a certain Prior expected me some time and that boat must presumably return some day. Meanwhile I was at liberty to stay in the house if I chose.

"Will it be a question of days or weeks?"

"A question of weeks or months."

David interposed in alternate Portuguese and English that he thought the Boundary Commission had a boat going down in a few days; he would go into the town and enquire. I explained to the monk that if this were the case I would gladly accept his invitation; if there were no Commission boat I would return with David to Guiana. With rather lugubrious courtesy the monk,

who named Father Alcuin, showed a and a shower bath; explained that he and the other guest had already breakfasted; sent to the convent for food for me. I ate the first palatable meal since I had left St. Ignatius, changed and slept. Presently David returned with reassuring information. The Commission boat passing through in four or five days; a week after that there would be a trade launch. He smiled proudly both at bringing good news and because he had bought a startling new belt out of his wages. Then he and Francisco bade me good-bye and went to rest with the horses on the other bank of the river.

Already, in the few hours of my sojourn there, the Boa Vista of my imagination had come to grief. Gone; engulfed in an earthquake, uprooted by a tornado and tossed sky-high like chaff in the wind, scorched up with brimstone like Gomorrah, toppled over with trumpets like Jericho, ploughed like Carthage, bought, demolished and transported brick by brick to another continent though it had taken the fancy of Mr. Hearst; tall Troy down. When I set out on a stroll of exploration, I no longer expected the city I had had in mind during the thirsty days of approach; the shady boulevards; kiosks for flowers and cigars and illustrated papers; the hotel terrace and the cafés; the baroque church built by seventeenth-century missionaries; the bastions of the old fort; the bandstand in the square, standing amidst fountains and flowering shrubs; the soft, slightly swaggering citizens, uniformed and spurred, others with Southern elegance twirling little canes, bowing from the waist and raising boater hats, flicking with white gloves indiscernible particles of dust from their white

linen spats; dark beauties languorous on balconies, ■ glancing over fans at the café tables. All that extravagant and highly improbable expectation had been obliterated like ■ sand castle beneath the encroaching tide.

Closer investigation did nothing ■ restore it. There was the broad main street up which ■ had come; two parallel, less important streets, and four or five ■ laid at right angles to them. At ■ quarter of ■ mile in every direction they petered out into straggling foot-paths. They were all called Avenidas and labelled with ■ of politicians of local significance. The town had been planned on an ambitious scale, spacious, rectangular, but most of the building lots were still unoccupied. There was one fair-sized stores, ■ little larger and a little better stocked than Figuiredo's, half ■ dozen seedy little shops; an open booth advertising the services of a barber-surgeon who claimed to wave women's hair, extract teeth and cure venereal disease; ■ tumbledown house inhabited by the nuns, an open schoolhouse where ■ fever-stricken bearded teacher could be observed monotonously haranguing a huge class of listless little boys; ■ wireless office, and a cottage where they accepted letters for the post; there ■ two cafés; ■ the main street ■ a little shed, selling *farine*, bananas and fish, there ■ three tables in front of it, under a tree, where ■ few people collected in the evening to drink coffee in the light of a single lantern; the second, in a side street, ■ ■ attractive. It had ■ concrete floor and ■ counter where one could buy cigarettes and nuts, there ■ dominoes for the use of habitués and besides coffee, one could drink ■ and expensive beer.

The only place, besides the Benedictine Priory, which had any pretensions to magnificence was the Church,

■ modern building painted in yellow and orange horizontal stripes, with ornate concrete mouldings; there were old bells outside, and inside three sumptuous altars, with embroidered frontals and veils, carved reredoses, large, highly coloured statues, artificial flowers and polished candlesticks, decorated wooden pews, ■ marble font bearing in ■■■■■ letters the ■■■■ of the chief merchant of the town, ■ harmonium; everything very new, and clean ■ ■ hospital – not ■ hen ■ ■ pig in the building. I ■■■ curious to know by what benefaction this expensive church had ■■■■ into being and was told that, like most things, it had started “in the days of the Company.”

I discovered ■■■ English-speaking person in the town; a singularly charmless youth, the illegitimate son of a prominent Georgetown citizen whom I had met there ■ Christmas time. This served as ■ fragile link between us, for the young man told me that he hated his father and had thought of shooting him on more than one occasion. “Now I have been married and have written five times for money and had no answer.”

He ■■■ completely fleshless like all the inhabitants of Boa Vista, with dank, black hair hanging ■■■ his eyes, which ■■■ of slightly lighter yellow than the rest of his face. He spoke in a melancholy drawl. He ■■■ almost the only person I saw doing any work in the whole town. He drove a motor launch for the store-keeper and owned a small blacksmith's shop where he made branding irons and mended guns. Most of the other inhabitants seemed ■ have no occupation of any kind, being caught up in the vicious circle of semi-starvation which makes people too apathetic ■ ■■■■ themselves for ■■■■. Perhaps they picked up a few

casual wages during the flood season when boats ran from Manaus fairly frequently and the ranchers came in for stores and needed labour for shipping their cattle. All the time that I was there ■ scarcely saw anyone except the school teacher ■ anything – or spend anything. Even in the café the majority of customers ■ to gossip and play dominoes and went away without ordering ■ cup of coffee. At ■ miles distant ■ ■ settlement of soldiers who brought ■ few shillings into the town; they ■ reservists bedded out with wives on small allotments. An aged town clerk presumably received ■ sort of wages; ■ ■ doubt did the itinerant government vet. who appeared from time to time; so did the wireless operator and an official of villainous aspect called the "Collector." But the other thousand odd inhabitants spent the day lying indoors in their hammocks and the evenings squatting on their doorsteps gossiping. Land was free, and, ■ the nuns proved, could produce excellent vegetables, but the diet of the town was *farine, tasso* and a little fish, all of which were of negligible cost. But it ■ far from being the care-free, idyllic improvidence one hears described of the South Sea Islands. Everyone looked ill and discontented. There ■ not a fat man ■ ■ anywhere. The women, in fact, led an even drearier life than the ■. They had ■ household possessions to ■ for, ■ cooking to do, they left their children to sprawl about the streets naked ■ in rags. They ■ pretty – very small and thin, small boned and with delicate features; ■ few of them took trouble with their appearance and put in an appearance at Mass ■ Sundays in light dresses, stockings and shoes, and cheap, ■ combs in their hair.

From fragmentary and ■ altogether reliable sources

I picked up a little of the history of Boa Vista. It is a melancholy record. The patriotic Brazilian will find little to say in favour of the inhabitants of Amazonas; they are mostly descended from convicts, loosed there after their term of imprisonment — the French loose their criminals in Cayenne, to make whatever sort of living they can in this inhospitable country. Practically all of them are of mixed Indian and Portuguese blood. There is no accurate census but a recent medical survey in the Geographical Magazine reports that they are dying out, families usually becoming sterile in three generations; alien immigrants, mostly German and Japanese are gradually pushing what is left of them up country; Boa Vista is their final halting place before extinction. The best of them go out into the ranches; the worst remain in the town.

They are naturally homicidal by inclination, and every man, however poor, carries arms; only the universal apathy keeps them from frequent bloodshed. There were no shootings while I was there; in fact there had not been one for several months, but I lived all the time in an atmosphere that was novel to me, where murder was always in the air. The German at the Priory constantly slept with a loaded gun at his bedside and expressed the greatest surprise at seeing me going shopping without a revolver, as a Londoner might show if one went out without a hat; the blacksmith, partly no doubt owing to his avocation, spoke of little else; one of his main pre-occupations was altering trigger springs so that they could be fired quick as the draw.

There was rarely a conviction for murder. The two most sensational trials of late years had both resulted in acquittals. One was the case of a young Britisher who

had come █████ from Guiana, panning gold. He had no right there and █████ evening in the café tipsily expressed his willingness to shoot anyone who interfered with him. The boast █████ recognised █████ constituting provocation when, a few nights later, he █████ shot in the back and robbed, while entering his house.

The other █████ more remarkable. Two respected citizens, a Dr. Zany and a Mr. Homero Cruz █████ sitting █████ a verandah talking, when a political opponent rode up and shot Dr. Zany. His plea of innocence, when brought to trial, █████ that the whole thing had been a mistake; he had meant to kill Mr. Cruz. The judges accepted the defence and brought in a verdict of death from misadventure. It █████ the first time in my life that I found myself in contact with a society in which murder was regarded as being as common and mildly regrettable as divorce in England; there was no glamour in it; I found it neither heroic nor horrifying; instead it seemed to spring from █████ species of arrested development.

The officials at Boa Vista live at a safe a distance from supervision and █████ badly paid, that inevitably they make what profits they █████ from bribes. Fortunately my meagre baggage and travel-torn appearance did not excite their cupidity. I heard several stories later of their extortion that were probably true. Twice lately British ranchers had come down by motor launch, in the flood season, to buy provisions. In each case the officer in charge had attempted to seize his boat under pretext that some regulation had been contravened, and the ranchers had had to make their escape by night, in one case under fire.

From time to time attempts have been made █████ raise

the condition of the [redacted] A little before the War [redacted] German appeared with ample capital and began buying cattle. He offered and paid [redacted] bigger price than the ranchers had ever before received; he fitted out [redacted] fleet of large motor launches [redacted] take the beasts down [redacted] market at Manaus, the scheme being that if he could organise [redacted] regular supply and get them down quickly and in good condition their value would compensate for the higher rate; he even sent [redacted] man [redacted] the border with [redacted] bag of sovereigns [redacted] buy cattle [redacted] Dadanawa. The project [redacted] perfectly sound financially and would have brought considerable advantage to the district. but it [redacted] destined to failure. Before the first convoy had reached the market, he had been shot and killed by an official whom he had neglected to bribe. The defence was that he had been shot while evading arrest on [redacted] charge of collecting turtles' eggs out of [redacted] The murderer [redacted] exonerated and the boats never reappeared at Boa Vista.

A more recent enterprise had been that of "the Company," so frequently referred to. I [redacted] learned the full story of this fiasco, for the Benedictines were deeply involved in it and [redacted] did not like to press the question at the Priory. The blacksmith gravely assured [redacted] that the scandal had been so great that the Archbishop had been taken to Rome and imprisoned by the Pope. There certainly seemed to have been [redacted] than ordinary mismanagement of the affair. Father Alcuin [redacted] mentioned it except to say that things had not gone as well as they had hoped. So far as [redacted] could gather the facts are these:

A year or two ago, inflamed by charitable zeal, the wealthy Benedictines at Rio conceived the old plan of

bringing prosperity and self-respect ■ Boa Vista. Geographically and politically the town held the key position ■ the whole, immense territory of the Northern Amazon tributaries. The monks ■ that instead of its present position ■ ■ squalid camp of ramshackle cut-throats, it might be ■ thriving city, ■ beacon of culture illuminating the dark lands about it, ■ centre from which they could educate and evangelise the Indians, ■ place that might typify the ■ very dubious superiority of the civilised life. They imagined it, even, ■ a miniature ecclesiastical state where industry, ■ and government should be in the benevolent hands of the Church; ■ happy dream, glowing with possibilities of success to those imperfectly acquainted with the real character of Boa Vista.

Accordingly "the Company" ■ launched, under the highest ecclesiastical patronage, financed by Benedictine money and managed by the brother of ■ of the hierarchy. The method by which the town ■ to be raised to prosperity was, again, sensible enough to anyone who expected normal working conditions. Instead of the cattle being transported to the slaughter-houses ■ Manaus, they ■ to be butchered ■ the spot and tinned. Cheap corned beef, it ■ assumed, would rapidly take the place of the unnourishing *tasso* and would provide a ■ valuable and ■ manageable export than live cattle. The factory would provide regular and remunerative employment to all in the district and, following the best tradition of big business, "the Company" would also provide the necessities and ■ ■ which their wages should be spent; the profits, rapidly circulating, would be used in public services. No ■ had any ulterior motive; the whole

scheme ■■■ for the glory of God and the comfort of the people of the place. In Rio, ■■ paper, it all seemed faultless. Operations ■■■ begun on a large scale.

The canning factory ■■■ built and installed with the best modern machinery, an electric plant was ■■ up, providing the streets and the houses with light; ■ fine Church, ■ hospital and ■ small school ■■■ built; there was soon to be ■ larger school, a Priory and ■ convent; liberal wages ■■■ paid out, two hotels and ■ cinema opened; ■ refrigerator provided Boa Vista with the first ice it had ever seen. Everything seemed to be going admirably.

But the monks at Rio had reckoned without the deep-rooted, local antagonism ■ anything godly or decent; a prejudice which at the moment ■■ particularly inflamed by the unforeseen arrival of an irresponsible American with a rival scheme for improvement. His more ambitious proposal was to ■■ a motor road and railway through the impassable bush that separated the town from Manaus, a project ■■■ or less equivalent in magnitude to the making of the Panama Canal. Finding that concessions had already been granted to the Benedictines which made his already impracticable railway legally impossible, he fell back on explaining to the inhabitants the great advantages of which they had been deprived, the higher wages he would have paid, the greater prosperity which he would have initiated. The citizens, naturally disposed to see ■ sinister purpose in any activity, however small, had already become suspicious of the great changes that ■■■ taking place. The American emphasised the foreign birth of most of the Order and the relationship between the manager of the company and the high ecclesiastic in Rio with the

result that by the time the monks and nuns reached their new home, they found everyone fairly convinced that a swindle was being perpetrated at their expense. It ■■■ only with difficulty and ■■■ danger that they succeeded in landing, being attacked with hostile demonstrations and showers of stones.

From then onwards everything ■■■ against the Benedictines who ■■■ insulted and boycotted. The canning factory proved ■ failure; no ■ would ■ the ice—an unnatural, impermanent substance, typical of everything foreign; dishonest stuff that had lost half its weight even before you got it home—they didn't want the hospital, much preferring to sicken and die in their hammocks in the decent manner traditional to the place; ■ one paid his electric light bill and the plant had to be stopped. The priests went down with fever and, ■ by one, had to be ■ back to Manaus. "The Company" became bankrupt and all further work was stopped. No Priory ■ built, no big school, no convent. At the time of my arrival things were ■ their lowest ebb. Father Alcuin ■ the last priest left and he ■ ■ ill that only supernatural heroism kept him ■ his work. Often he ■ only able to totter to the Church to say his Mass and then retire to bed in high fever for the remainder of the day. The palatial house in which he was living, ■ the building originally intended for the hospital. Its two big wards were now occupied by a carpenter engaged in making benches for the Church, and ■ government vet. who fitted up a laboratory there, which he used from time ■ time between his rounds of the ranches; he was investigating a prevalent form of paralysis in horses which he attributed to worms. Whatever minute flicker of good still survived in the town,

was preserved by the nuns, silent, devoted, indefatigable, who lived in appalling quarters ■■■ the river-bank, kept a school for the handful of bourgeois daughters, and nursed ■ negro and ■ aged diamond prospector who had arrived separately in ■ dying condition from up country and ■■■ in ■ mood to respect the prejudices of the town. It was, ■ I have said, the lowest point ; a ■■■ Prior was expected daily to reorganise things and set them to rights.

The Priory – as the hospital was ■■■ called – ■■■ no exception to the rule formulated in the last chapter, that the religious ■■■ served by idiots. A single Indian boy of impenetrable stupidity looked after us. He had ■ round brown face and a constant, mirthless grin which revealed rows of sharply filed teeth. He giggled when observed and would, in occasional bursts of confidence, produce for inspection a grubby sheet of lined paper on which he had tried to copy an alphabet written for him by Father Alcuin. He was absolutely honest, and dazed with delight when, on leaving, I gave him ■ small tip. His chief duty ■■■ to fetch the meals from the convent kitchen, quarter of a mile away. They arrived cold and dusty, but with surprising regularity. He also rang the angelus and could always be found by the bell rope half ■ hour before the time, waiting for the clock hands to reach the appointed place. The rest of his day was spent in talking to ■ captive monkey that ■■■ tethered to a tree in the garden, or in gaping, hour after hour, ■ the jars of worms which filled the vet.'s laboratory.

The only other occupant of the house ■■■ the German who had first greeted ■■■ arrival ; ■ ■■■ typical, except in his eccentricities, of the men of his ■■■ which one ■■■■■■■ in remote places ■■ ■■■ the globe ; part of

the great exodus of disillusioned soldiers and students that followed the defeat of 1918, from Germany and the German colonies. I have encountered them, wistful and denationalised ■ Jews, in Abyssinia, Arabia and East Africa, and they make real to ■■■ of the clap-trap of Nazi patriotism.

Mr. Steingler ■■■ not ■ particularly attractive ■■■ I ■■■ discovered what he ■■■ doing in Boa Vista. He had ■ minute and unprofitable plantation up the River Uraricuera where he lived in complete solitude and, I gathered from his conversation, great privation. He spoke vaguely of business he had to do in the town and would often go shuffling off to gossip at the stores; he spoke of some mail he was expecting but when eventually the boat arrived from Manaus, there ■■■ nothing in it for him; he would sometimes announce his imminent departure, but always stayed on. He said he did not like to leave while Father Alcuin was so ill. The truth was I think that he could not bear to leave a place where there were people to talk to him in German; and he liked the food. He ■■■ ■ demonstratively greedy man and used to give great boyish whoops and guffaws of delight ■ he helped himself to the dishes, for at his farm, as he often explained, he had only *farine* and *tasso*.

It ■■■ only by slow degrees that he had ■■■ to his present condition. He had had ■ good job with a commercial firm in Manaus; then he had ■■■ to Boa Vista in the days of "the Company"; then he had wandered off ■ his own up country. It is possible that he ■■■ staying ■ at the Priory because absolute destitution awaited him at his farm.

He ■■■ a firm atheist and did not disguise his contempt for the activities of his hosts. I tried to point out to him

that it was particularly fortunate for him that some people still had such curious notions – the nurse nursed him through a grave illness the year before – but he said “No, it is for children,” and of the new Prior who was coming, “No doubt it is a step in his career.”

His appearance was extremely odd, for he carried himself with the stiff back of an infantryman while his loose sandals made him drag his feet in an incongruous manner, when he walked. He wore a shiny and threadbare suit of blue serge, a “boater” straw hat, a crumpled white collar and a narrow black tie. His ankles were bare and his sandals of his own manufacture. He invariably carried an absurd little ebony cane with a dented silver crook. We went to the café together most nights but he would seldom accept a drink, saying at first that he could not drink beer when it was not iced; later I realised it was because he could not afford it himself and in this one form would not take hospitality he could not return (a peculiarly irritating form of priggishness), but because of his pride I used to invent reasons – that a boat was expected, that Father Alcuin was better, that it was my birthday – and then he would drink the beer with relish and laugh loudly at whatever I said.

We talked in a laborious mixture of French and English, of neither of which languages Mr. Steingler had much command; indeed he seemed to be barely intelligible in any language; his fluent Portuguese seemed to lead to endless misunderstandings at the café and his German seemed to puzzle Father Alcuin. The difficulty lay chiefly in discovering which of his many languages Mr. Steingler was trying to speak.

Conversation ■ meals ■ always uneasy, for Father Alcuin knew ■ English and only the most formal French; most of the time he and Mr. Steingler would stumble along in German, occasionally explaining ■ obscure point in Portuguese; then, feeling that I ■ being left out of things, they would attempt to draw me in. Mr. Steingler would suddenly bow towards me, beam, and make curious animal sounds in the roof of his mouth.

Most of us, when speaking ■ foreign language, make some attempt to imitate the accents of the country; heaven knows, it is usually a pitiable attempt bearing the most meagre and shadowy likeness to the true sounds, but at least it is an indication that we *are* speaking an alien tongue, a warning light to the listener to pay closer attention; a salute of formal courtesy, like the running up of the country's flag in a foreign port. Not so Mr. Steingler who made no difference of any kind in his pronounciation whether he talked German ■ English, French or Portuguese. Moreover, he had, through prolonged denationalisation, largely forgotten from what languages his vocabulary derived, and would ■ out with such disconcerting questions as, "Commons dites-■ 'manquer' ■ French?"

As ■ rule Father Alcuin was too ill to eat; when he was in fever he kept to his ■ but in the days of intermission he usually sat at table with us, drinking a little soup. I do not think he ■ liked ■ much or understood what I ■ doing in his house, but he accepted my presence without complaint as he accepted all the other hardships of Boa Vista. He used to get a little outside news from the wireless operator and retail it to us; also alarming rumours such ■ that the unemployed

■■■ sacking London and that an unprecedented epidemic of influenza ■■■ killing off the French like flies. Only ■■ the subject of Freemasons did he show any violent emotion. It is possible that they had taken some sinister hand in the fiasco of "the Company," for the organisation assumes forces in South America that would appal their respectable brothers in England.

Was it really true that the King of England ■■■ ■■ Mason ?

I replied that I thought he was.

"Is that how he became King ? Did the Masons put him on the throne ?"

"No, he is king by legal hereditary right."

"Then how did the poor man fall into their power ?"

It was useless to explain that English Masons ■■■ for the most part Headmasters and Generals with, as far as I knew, ■■ criminal activities.

"That is what they say until they have you in their power. And the Prince of Wales, is he a Mason too ? Is that why he does not marry ? Do the Masons forbid it ?"

I think he began to suspect me of secret Masonary after a time, in spite of my conscientious assistance ■■ Sunday Mass.

The Church was, considering the villainy of the place, surprisingly well attended ; largely I suppose because the nasal singing of the girls' school provided the only kind of entertainment of the week. These children, shepherded to their places by the nuns, were dressed up in clean muslin veils and, the wealthier of them, long white cotton gloves ; they wore innumerable medals and coloured ribbons and sashes, proclaiming their different degrees of piety. They sang sugary little

vernacular hymns in tremulous, whining voices. They occupied the greater part of the Church. Beside them ■■■ the elderly ■■■ in best dresses and clean stockings. What with this weekly blossoming of femininity, and the concrete architectural ornaments of the building, the candles and the artificial flowers, Sunday Mass ■■■ the nearest thing to ■ pretty spectacle that Boa Vista provided, and the men assembled in fair numbers to enjoy it. They did not come into the Church for that is contrary to Brazilian etiquette, but they clustered in the porch, sauntering out occasionally to smoke a cigarette. The normal male costume of the town ■■■ a suit of artificial silk pyjamas, which many of the more elegant had washed weekly, ■ that ■ Sundays they carried themselves with an air of great refinement and caution. Some minutes before the Elevation they might be seen unfolding their handkerchiefs and spreading them on the bare boards of the floor; then, when the bell rang, they would delicately kneel ■ one knee, rise, shake out the handkerchief, refold it and tuck it away in the breast pocket. This, however, ■■■ the practice only of the most pious; the majority remained throughout propped against the walls, staring at the napes of the girls' necks. A priest told ■■■ that when he ■■■ ■■■ to the country he had remonstrated with the men, telling them that this ■■■ ■ fashion in which to hear Mass.

"We haven't come to hear Mass," they had replied, fingering the revolver butts in their holsters. "We're here to ■■■ you don't interfere with ■■■ women."

No other event marked the passing of the days.

In ■ previous travel book ■ ■■■ remarked that I ■■■ bored for some days on ■ Congo river steamer. Not only did the reviewers take hold of this ■ ■ suitable text for

their criticism, but I received a handful of cross letters from strangers saying, I doubt with good sense, that if travelling bored me I had far better stay at home and, anyway, give up writing about it; [redacted] suggested that it was, to them, the height of adventure to drift through the rain between featureless mangrove swamps and that it was [redacted] intolerable injustice that I, who could afford to do so, should not provide others with the [redacted] I could not appreciate. So I will not repeat my mistake. I will not say I [redacted] bored in Boa Vista but merely remark that I found very little to occupy my time. There was [redacted] edition of Bossuet's sermons and a few lives of the Saints in French, for me to read; I could walk to the wireless office and learn that no news had been heard of the Boundary Commissioners' boat; I could visit the English-speaking blacksmith and watch him tinkering with antiquated automatic pistols. This young man would not come with me to the café on account of his having recently beaten the proprietor—an act of which he was inordinately proud, though it can have required [redacted] great courage since he was a very old [redacted] and slightly crippled. I could give bananas to the captive monkey and I could study the bottled [redacted] in the laboratory; I could watch the carpenter in his [redacted] moments of industry, sawing up lengths of plank. There [redacted] really quite a number of things for [redacted] to do, but, in spite of them all, the days seemed to pass slowly.

The blacksmith, who knew all that [redacted] going [redacted] in the town promised to tell [redacted] [redacted] soon as the Commissioner's boat was sighted, but it so happened that he forgot to do so, and I only learned from Mr. Steingler, one morning after I had been six days in the Priory, that it had arrived the previous evening and [redacted] due

■ leave in ■ hour; the Commissioner ■ ■ that ■ at the wireless station. I hurried off to interview him. Things might have been less difficult if Father Alcuin had been able to accompany me but it was ■ of the days when he ■ down with fever. Alone I was able to make no impression. The Commissioner ■ ■ amicable little man, in high good humour ■ the prospect of ■ few days' leave in Manaus, but he flatly refused ■ have me in his boat. I cannot hold it against him. Everyone in that district is a potential fugitive from justice and he knew nothing of me except my dishevelled appearance and my suspicious anxiety to get away from Boa Vista. I showed my passport and letters of credit, but he ■ not impressed. I besought him to cable to Georgetown for my credentials, but he pointed out that it might take a week to get ■ answer. I offered him large wads of greasy notes. But he was not having any. He knew too much about foreigners who appeared alone and unexplained in the middle of Amazonas; the fact of my having money made me the more sinister. He smiled, patted my shoulder, gave ■ a cigarette, and sharp ■ time left without me.

I cannot hold it against him. I do not think that the British Commissioners would have done any ■ for a stray Brazilian. But it was in a despondent and rather desperate mood that I heard his boat chugging away out of sight down the Rio Branco.

From then onwards my only ■ ■ to find ■ other ■ of getting away from Boa Vista. The trade boat of which David had spoken became increasingly elusive as I tried ■ pin its proprietor down ■ any definite statement of its date of departure. He

the manager of the chief store, a low-spirited young man named Martinez. I went to him every day to talk about it; he seemed glad of a chat but could hold out only the vaguest hopes for me. The boat had to arrive first. It should be on its way with the Prior; when it came, there would be time enough to discuss its departure. All sorts of things had to be considered—cargo, mail, other passengers. Day after day went by until all faith I had ever cherished in the trade boat, slowly seeped away. Ordinary vexation at the delay began to give place to anxiety, for everyone in the town seemed to spend at least three days a week in fever, and I had no wish to catch it; the malaria of that district takes a peculiarly disagreeable and persistent form. It seemed to me a poor gamble to risk becoming semi-invalid for life for the dubious interest of a voyage down the Rio Branco. So I abandoned the idea of Manaus and decided to return to Guiana and visit Dadanawa.

This journey, so simple from British territory, where one was supported by the goodwill of the mission and the ranchers, presented endless difficulties from the other side. There was a large ranch, surviving from the days of "the Company," which still belonged to the Benedictines, but with the arrival of the Prior imminent, Father Alcuin could not take the responsibility of hiring horses. Mr. Martinez said he could arrange it but days passed and no horses appeared. He found a guide, however, in the person of a good-natured boy named Marco; he was fifteen or sixteen, from the country, and had been hanging round the store for several weeks in search of employment; this youth, after a house-to-house enquiry lasting several days, eventually secured the hire of a horse for himself, belonging, as it turned

out, ■ Mr. Martinez and quartered ■ the ranch on the other side of the river. I ■■ needed another horse - if possible two - and provisions. Mr. Martinez had some tins of sweet biscuits and sardines, another shop had ■ tins of sausage; the ■ made bread and cheese. These would comfortably take us the three days' ride to Dadanawa. Horses ■ still an unsolved difficulty when help ■ from ■ unexpected quarter.

Mr. Steingler had hitherto listened apathetically ■ my complaints, merely remarking from time to time, "les peuples ici sont tous bêtes, tous sauvages; il faut toujours de patience," until one day the thought came to him that there might be something in it for him. He opened the subject cautiously, saying one evening that even if I secured ■ horse, it would be impossible to get a saddle; both were equally important. I agreed. He then went on to say that it so happened that he had a very good saddle himself, ■ that he would not readily part with to anyone, ■ particularly fine, new saddle of European workmanship, ■ rare and invaluable possession in ■ country like this. However, seeing my difficulty, and feeling the kinship that ■ European feels for another in ■ savage country, he was willing to part with it ■ me.

He took ■ to his ■ and dragged it out from under his bed. It was made ■ the English pattern but clearly of the most slipshod local workmanship; more- ■ it was of great age and in deplorable condition, half unsewn, with padding as hard ■ metal, every leather frayed and half worn through, several buckles missing. I asked him what he wanted for it.

Between European gentlemen, he said, it was impossible to bargain ■ money. He would call in a

friend to make an assessment. The friend the carpenter from the next room who was transparently in the racket up to his eyes. He turned the saddle, praised it (embarrassing himself and Mr. Steingler by inadvertently detaching another buckle while he spoke) and said that, all things considered, 20,000 *Reis* (£5) would be a moderate price. A saddle, made on the ranches, with elaborate ornamental tooling, cost rather less than that in the country, but European gentlemen could not bargain money. Besides I a possibility of advantage to myself. I accepted the assessment and then began in my turn, to point out that necessary as a saddle was, and much as I admired this particular one of Mr. Steingler's, it of very little use to me without a horse. I would buy it his price, if he would find me a mount to put under it.

From that moment onwards Mr. Steingler worked for indefatigably. He out there and then in his boater hat, twirling his ridiculous cane, and by evening was able to report that the Collector had the very horse for me; a beast of some age, he admitted, but immensely strong, big boned, well-conditioned; just what needed for savannah travelling. We went to him. He of much the quality the saddle and curiously enough, commanded exactly the price. Presumably 20,000 *Reis* was a unit in their minds, the highest figure to which avarice could aspire. I bought him the spot. I do know what rake-off Mr. Steingler got the transaction, whether he merely wished to keep in with the Collector. I preferred be thought a mug and get away, rather than to achieve a reputation for astuteness and risk spending an unnecessary hour in Boa Vista.

That evening Mr. Steingler did a further bit of business, by producing the ~~man~~ clerk, a venerable old ~~man~~ with a long white beard, who ~~was~~ willing to hire me a pack horse he owned in the corral ~~and~~ the further bank — 4,000 *Reis* for the journey to Dadanawa. I paid him and went ~~to~~ bed well contented with the prospect of immediate escape.

Next morning I bade farewell to Father Alcuin. The plans for my departure had been freely discussed ~~at~~ table for ~~some~~ a week, but had not penetrated the feverish trance in which the poor monk lived. He was greatly surprised, and when I handed him a donation to the house to cover my board and lodging, he woke suddenly to the fact that he had exerted himself very little on my behalf; it was then that he revealed, what before he had kept carefully hidden, that he had a wooden pack saddle which he could put at my disposal. Thus equipped and blessed I felt that I was at last ~~on~~ my way.

But it was not to be as easy ~~as~~ that; the forces of chaos were still able to harass my retreat and inflict some damaging attacks. The next two days, in fact, ~~were~~ slapstick farce, raised at moments to the heights of fantasy by the long-awaited appearance of the Prior.

News of his approach and imminent arrival ~~came~~ ~~on~~ the morning of the day that I had fixed for my departure. Instantly the Priory ~~was~~ ~~filled~~ by ~~them~~. They worked in the way ~~they~~ have, which is ~~at~~ the same time sub-human and superhuman; poultry and angels curiously compounded in a fluttering, clucking, purposeful scurry of devoted industry; they beat up the Prior's mat-~~ress~~ and dusted every crevice of his quarters, they trotted to and fro with wicker rocking-chairs and clean sheets, they lined the corridor to his ~~room~~ with potted

shrubs, put palm leaves behind all the pictures, arranged embroidered tablecloths on every available shelf and ledge, decorated the bookcase with artificial flowers, built a triumphal arch over the front door and engrossed programmes for a hastily organised concert. I regretted very much that I should not be there to see his reception.

My plans were that I should cross the river in the afternoon with the grey cob I had bought from the Collector; then to the rounding in of the other two horses, sleep by the corral on the further side and start for Dadanawa first thing the next morning.

Mr. Martinez had organised the crossing, for which he had hired me a canoe and another boy, whom I was to meet with Marco at three o'clock. At half-past four they arrived; the other boy turned out to be a child of eight or nine. Mr. Martinez explained that he was taking the place of his elder brother who had fever that day.

We carried the saddles and baggage down the bank, found the canoe, which when loaded was dangerously low in the water. The descent at the usual landing place was too steep for a horse, so it was arranged that the small boy and I should paddle to a point up stream where the bank shelved down gently, where Marco would meet us with the horse. It was half-past five when we reached the place and found no sign of Marco. The sun sets at six. For half an hour the small boy and I hunched in the canoe—I cramped and fretful, he idly playful with my belongings—then we paddled back in the darkness to the landing place. Sundry whistlings and catcalls ensued until presently Marco loomed up through the shadows riding the grey. We neither spoke a word of the other's language but by repetitions and

gestures, and that telepathy which seems to function between two people who have something of urgency to communicate, ■ got to understand that the horse had taken some catching, that Marco was quite ready to try swimming him across in the dark, that I thought this lunacy, that the baggage was ■ be left where it was, that Marco ■ to sling his hammock by the bank and guard it all night, that I would ■ at dawn and we would ■ then. I cannot explain how ■ discussed all this, but in the end the situation ■ well understood. Then I hurried back to the Priory which I had left ■ few hours before with so many formal thanks and good wishes.

In my vexation I had entirely forgotten about the Prior. I now came to the refectory, ten minutes late for dinner, out of breath and wet to the knees, to find him sitting at table. He was, as it happens, in the middle of the story of his own sufferings on the way up. It was a problem of good manners of the kind that are solved ■ astutely on the women's pages of the Sunday papers. What should I do? It was clearly impossible to escape unobserved, for the Prior had already fixed ■ with ■ look of marked aversion. ■ could not slip into ■ chair with ■ murmured apology for my lateness, because ■ explanation of my reappearance ■ due to Father Alcuin, and of my existence to my new host, the Prior. There ■ nothing for it but to interrupt the Prior's story with ■ of my own. He did not take it too kindly. Father Alcuin attempted to help ■ out, explaining rather lamely that I ■ ■ Englishman who had waited here on the way to Manaos.

Then what ■ I doing attempting to cross the Rio Branco in the dark? the Prior demanded sternly.

I said I was ■ my way to Dadanawa.

"But Dadanawa is nowhere ■ Manaos."

Clearly the whole thing seemed to him highly unsatisfactory and suspicious. However, with the charity of his Order he bade ■ sit down. The idiot boy removed the soup plates and the Prior resumed his story. In honour of his arrival ■ fish ■ had been added to the dinner; nothing could have been less fortunate for he had lived on fish for the last ten days and on that particular sort of ■ and tasteless fish that ■ offered him. He glared at it resentfully over his spectacles and ordered it to be removed. Mr. Steingler watched it go with evident distress.

The Prior was no doubt ■ very good man, but he did not add to the ■ of the refectory. He was thoroughly exhausted by his journey and in no mood to bustle off to the nuns' concert. He had already formed ■ low opinion of Mr. Steingler and my arrival confirmed him in his general disapproval. He ■ there on ■ mission of reorganisation and Mr. Steingler and myself were obviously the kind of thing that had to be investigated and cleaned up. He finished his narration of delays and discomforts, took ■ dislike against the pudding, and before Mr. Steingler had nearly finished his first helping, ■ to recite ■ immensely long grace. Then with hostile adieux, stumped away grumbling to the celebrations ■ the school.

Next day at dawn I ■ him ■ his way to Mass and he ■ more amicable. I bade him good-bye with renewed thanks and went down to the river. The small boy and Marco ■ there; the baggage was intact; after ■ hour's perilous and exhausting work ■ got the canoe and the horse across ■ the other side; the child

paddled back and I settled down to wait until Marco had collected the other horses. The pack horse easily identified by some *vaqueiros* who waiting there. He a wretched creature, down in the pasterns, but baggage very light and it seemed probable that he would get it to Dadanawa. Mr. Martinez's horse could not be found. After hours Marco returned, smiling and shrugging and shaking his head.

Back to Boa Vista. We had to wait until noon for a canoe. I arrived at the Priory more, a good quarter of an hour late for luncheon. The Prior's doubts of my honesty became doubts of my sanity. Once more I made my adieux, repeating the thanks with increased apologies. Mr. Martinez, at last roused to activity, decided to accompany me himself to the other side and find the horse. He issued a number of peremptory orders which lethargically obeyed. His motor launch brought up, four or five men recruited, and a formidable expedition set out. After some hours, the horse discovered straying miles distant, lassoed and led in. Then a further disaster occurred. A large which had been nosing round the baggage for time discovered a way in to the kit bag and ate the whole of the bread and cheese which I had been counting on my main sustenance in the next few days.

Back to Boa Vista; back to the Priory, just they finishing dinner. The Prior regarded me with undisguised despair. I was able, however, to buy another loaf and cheese from the convent. Next morning, without further contact with my hosts, I slipped out of the Priory and left Boa Vista for the last time in Mr. Martinez's motor launch.

CHAPTER VI

Leaving Boa Vista—change of route—lost on the savannah—pleasures of travelling—change of route—Karasabai—Tipuru.

THERE ■ ■ fringe of palm about ■ mile from the corral, which in floodtime marked the river's edge, but before ■ had reached it the red roofs of Boa Vista ■ already out of view. Looking back, and finding the town invisible, I felt myself freed from the dead weight that I had been carrying about with me all the blank, fourteen days of my sojourn, but the gaiety and inward radiance were of short duration, for the mist of frustration which had enveloped all my dealings with the place still hung about us and followed us like the clouds of cabouri fly for the whole of that journey.

The horses had looked discouraging from the start but I had learned, since the first day at Takama, to expect ill-looking animals and even to get fair service from them. These, however, were well below the second-class of savannah horses. The best of them was the grey cob I had bought from the Collector; he ■ old and lazy and disposed to lie down in protest when the saddle ■ put ■ his back, but he was in reasonable working condition. Later he developed ■ gall high ■ his back, but we were able to improvise a rope crupper, padded with rag under the tail, which held the saddle back from the place, ■ that sometimes ridden and sometimes loaded with the pack, he alone finished the journey with ■ Marco's horse was young and weak and had not

been out ■ grass long enough since his last bout of work, but the boy ■ light and rode him easily, ■ that ■ ■ slow pace he was good for ■ days. The town clerk's pack horse ■ hopeless. How hopeless ■ did not realise until at the fifth mile he went dead lame in the off fore. There ■ ■ ■ question of taking him to Dadanawa, the only problem ■ whether he could make the nearest ranch. We ■ more than half-way, so that it would have been useless to turn back. We lightened his pack to ■ negligible weight, dividing it between our two mounts (mine of course lying down in protest) and ■ walking pace dragged him painfully on across the savannah. We passed no water that day; every creek ■ a gully of cracked mud; although we covered less than ten miles ■ took over seven hours in doing it.

It would be tedious to describe the next two days in detail. Our first halt was ■ ■ ranch where all the men ■ away on a roundup except ■ aged, one-eyed *vaqueiro*. Although only ■ few miles from Boa Vista, the people seemed of a different race. A stout lady received ■ hospitably and three or four daughters saw to ■ needs, bringing out coffee and chairs, and giggling discreetly ■ us from the shadows. Marco had none of the debonair grace of David. He would hang back diffidently, afraid to enter and, since I had ■ ■ of communicating with them, my intercourse with ■ various hosts and hostesses ■ limited to smiles and bows. He ■ able to ■ the loan of a horse, however, to replace the lame pack horse which ■ turned into their corral ■ await his return. It took him and the one-eyed man three hours to find it so that ■ had already lost the good hours of the morning before ■ resumed our

travels. Altogether ■■ had lost ■ full day's stage in the first twenty-four hours. This was ■ serious ■■ ■■ ■■ carrying ■ minimum of supplies and the bread speedily became uneatable, carried, ■ it was, in ■ ■■ bag under the full blaze of the ■■. Another thirsty, monotonous day brought us to a little out-station where ■ bearded man, bare to the waist but heavily armed, ■■ cooking some fresh pork. We dined with him and slung our hammocks outside his hut. Next day in another six or ■■ hours we reached ■ ranch where ■■ with ■ face like El Greco's St. Ignatius was making ■ pair of leggings. Martinez's horse ■■ by now good for very little and this was our last chance of getting ■ remount before Dadanawa. I ■■ Marco tackling him on the question and after long discussion, it ■■ evident that the request ■■ being refused. However he brought us luncheon—the inevitable *farine* and *sasso*—and seemed to be genial enough. I expressed admiration of his leather work with various grimaces and nods. We had only ■ handful of biscuits left from our stores and ■■ tin of sausage. I opened the tin, turned it out on ■ plate and offered it to our host. He refused, but while I ate I noticed that he studied the plate with keen interest. I renewed the offer and this time he leant across, cut off ■ piece with his clasp knife and tasted it suspiciously. He liked it and finished the plate. Those sausages ■■ ■■ a horse, for after the meal he beckoned to Marco and I saw with delight that he had taken ■ lasso off its peg in the wall of the house. They went out together and returned in half an hour with ■ sturdy little skew ball ■■■■. Whenever we made ■ change of horses I took the best, gave Marco the second and put the pack, which ■■ weighed barely sixty pounds, ■ to the most



MARCO RECEIVING COFFEE ■■■ BRAZILIAN RANCHERS

(LAME PACK-HORSE IN BACKGROUND)

tired — this [redacted] by [redacted] the Collector's grey. With renewed vigour [redacted] [redacted] again and late in the afternoon forded the Takutu and rode up onto British soil, at a place where a large creek flowed out.

At sunset [redacted] found an Indian hut. If things had gone better we should have been already at Dadanawa, but there was two days' ride still before us. We had a few dusty biscuits and the vague hope of finding provisions among the Indians on the way. The house where we camped [redacted] empty of food except for a little sour milk and *farine*. It was no [redacted] fastidious distaste that kept [redacted] from eating *farine*; I had found [redacted] the journey to Boa Vista that it made [redacted] ill; accordingly I ate the last of the biscuits and went to bed hungry and slightly anxious for the future.

Hope and good spirits returned [redacted] dawn next day. There had been [redacted] light in the hut the evening before so that I had not been able [redacted] look at the map [redacted] attempt to fix [redacted] position. Now I began to take in our surroundings. Neither the ford [redacted] marked nor any of the ranches [redacted] the Brazilian side; all I had to go by was the position of the creek, and two large groups of bush-clad hills that lay immediately [redacted] the East of us. It [redacted] to me that these must be the Kanuku Mountains and the Kusads; our position lay midway between them, and the creek beside which we [redacted] camped must be the substantial river marked [redacted] the map [redacted] the Sauriwau. I verified this by asking the Indian, pointing to the creek and saying "Sauriwau?" he nodded emphatically. In that case the [redacted] was clear why [redacted] had taken so long in reaching the Takutu, for instead of striking dead [redacted] from Boa Vista in the direct line for Dadanawa, [redacted] had turned north and [redacted] a good forty miles out of

way. The cattle trail ■ Dadanawa, ■ marked ■ the map, ■ by the Sauriwau and this no doubt explained Marco's divagation. On these calculations ■ ■ only twenty miles from St. Ignatius. I had no particular reason for going ■ Dadanawa except the desire to visit the manager whom I had greatly liked in Georgetown and the curiosity of seeing the home in which old Melville had reigned. In our present position of short provisions and two exhausted horses, the obvious ■ ■ ■ make straight for my old host at St. Ignatius. I was unable to explain my reasoning to Marco and the map meant nothing to him, but by pointing north and saying "Ignatio" and "Bon Success" I got him to understand the change of plan. He was puzzled but acquiescent, so leaving him to manage the pack, I set out ahead ■ the fresh horse, a clearly marked trail before me, the knowledge that it was impossible to miss the way if I kept between the Takutu and the Kanuku mountains, and the confident expectation of surprising Father Mather at his twelve o'clock breakfast.

The air ■ clear and cool and the horse stepped out vigorously. As I gradually rounded the spur of the hills on my right I watched them ■ the contour that I seemed to know so well; the high dark line that I had ■ day after day from St. Ignatius. After ■ hour or ■ the path I ■ following narrowed to ■ single line and finally disappeared, but this did not greatly worry ■ I knew my direction and sooner ■ later I should ■ upon the main trail ■ more, so I rode ■ from half-past six until half-past eleven without much concern; then I began to feel it was time I came upon some familiar landmarks. There ■ ■ village which Father Mather and I had visited on foot, that

could not be far away. Some Indian huts, suddenly emerging from the screen of sand-paper trees, raised my hopes but when I approached them I realised they were not those I expected. I rode up to one of them and a few others scuttled inside at my approach. I tried to question them, pointing in the direction I was going and saying "Ignatius" and "Bon Success," but could get no indication of answer. At another hut one man leapt from his horse and cantered away at my approach. I rode on with some misgivings.

A line of hills had appeared on the horizon in front of me, presumably the Pakaraimas, and I reflected that I had never known them appear so close. The sun was now well up and the heat was overpowering; the horse had lost his freshness and could not be got out of a walk; the ground on all sides was the cruellest — dried marsh-land broken into hard hummocks — with no sign of a path anywhere; I had had no meal for twenty-four hours and felt suddenly dizzy. My fear was that I had ridden past the mission and should turn back south-west to find it. Marco, who had everything with him including my hammock, was some miles behind. It is easy in that district to pass within quarter of a mile of a mission and not see him. Since I was off the trail there was no probability of his picking me up if I stopped to wait.

The horse could go no further so I dismounted and led him. The only reasonable plan seemed to be to make for the river which must lie somewhere to my left; there at least I could get water and there, if anywhere, would be the landmarks I needed. So very painfully and unsteadily I began walking through the baked sedge. The horse pulled back from the halter and I was obliged to remount; he stumbled on, utterly beaten.

It was one of the low spots of the journey. I had been given a medal of St. Christopher before I left London. I felt that now, if ever, was the moment to invoke supernatural assistance. And it did. At that moment we reached water—a broad creek flowing to west. When we had both drunk we started again, slightly revived, down stream; and there the real miracle occurred in the appearance of an Indian hut standing among palm trees a hundred yards in front. Outside was an old Wapishiana saddling an ox. I went up to him and made signs that I wanted to eat. "Good morning," he said. "You hungry? Come inside, please."

A child unsaddled the horse and took him down to water. I entered and found the Indian's hammock. Presently his wife brought me some bread, three eggs and half a roast bird about the size of a grouse. At first I was too exhausted to be surprised at my reception. After I had eaten all I was offered my mind felt clearer. The old man came in and said, "Where you going?"

"St. Ignatius."

"Me going that way too. Going Bon Success to see Mr. Teddy. Me work for Mr. Teddy's father. Taking bwi (ox) there this afternoon."

"Is it far?"

"Not far. Get there to-morrow."

Then it began to break in on me that I was far further astray than I had thought. I still did not understand how. I pointed to the place I had passed.

"But those are the Kanukus."

"No, no, those Kanukus," and he pointed to the blue line of mountains on the horizon ahead of me.

But I was too tired to discuss the question further.

I lay back in the old man's hammock and shut my eyes, and it was then, in the hour's rest I took, half awake and wholly exhausted, that I slowly turned over in my mind what had happened and realised that an hour before I had been in serious danger of being lost and that when I could go on further four fortunate events had coincided in a way that seemed unlikely to recur often in the normal theory of probability; one, that I had found a house at all at that particular spot in a sparsely inhabited region, secondly that it belonged to an Indian who understood English, thirdly that he should have food in his house,* and fourthly and oddest of all that he should be going on the same road as I, on the same day – a journey which he probably did not make twice in five years.

The Problem may be stated mathematically thus: *Suppose that this particular district is crossed, on average, by two strangers a year; that in every two hundred Indians knows some English; one in every fifty Indian houses possesses surplus food; most Indians go to Bon Success once in every five years; there is one Indian house every fifteen miles; on February 21st, 1933, a stranger's horse gave out within quarter of a mile of an Indian house, whose owner spoke English, had food, and that day setting out for Bon Success. When is this likely to recur?* (supposing for the sake of the calculation that all strangers horses give out at the same stage of the journey). As I see it there is a 1:182.5 chance that there will be a traveller on any given day; 1:5,475 chance that his horse will stop within quarter of a mile, either side of a house; 1:1,095,000 chance that the particular inhabitant will

* A thing surprisingly uncommon. Indians usually eat what they have as soon as they get it.

speaking English; a 1:54,750,000 chance that he will also have food – and so on. But I am a mathematician, and possibly the question is not so simple as it looks. Anyway, I prefer to regard the incident as a benevolent intervention of St. Christopher's.

We went out at three that afternoon, the old Indian leading his ox. He had with him a small boy who in spite of their disparity of age, was apparently his son. This child rode my horse, who now refreshed, seemed well able to carry him. I am more than once humiliated to observe what far better value the Indians got from their horses than I could; it was not due solely to their slighter weight, but to the way they rode, sitting forward, balanced on the fork of their legs, swaying with each step, bare heels gently drumming the flanks, the leathers – or more often the loops of rope – let down to the full stretch – and only the great toe hooked into the stirrup. Probably my stolid, armchair English style of riding took more out of the animals than my weight and my heavy boots. In this case the child sat bare-back and the horse trotted along beside us as gaily as if he had been following free. I rode the little mare that had been intended for the boy.

In this fashion we struck up a fair pace to the north-east through thick grass land and presently reached the trail I had lost earlier in the day. Towards sunset we came to a belt of palm trees, a creek, and beyond them a deserted house, and there astride the ruinous roof and signalling ecstatically to us, was Marco. Up till then, for no very good reason, I had rather disliked the youth; but his genuine delight at my reappearance and the way in which he manifested it, seizing both my

hands and grinning all over his ugly little face, established a cordiality which, though it could not develop greatly, owing to my ignorance of Portuguese, persisted until he bade me farewell some days later, laden with the preposterous purchases for which he had exchanged his wages at Mr. Figueiredo's. We made another rearrangement by which the Indian took my grey and put the packs on to his ox, and then rode on together until about two hours after dark when we reached the Sauriwau where I had supposed we should be camping the night before. (Incidentally the name on the map appeared to be wrong for everyone spoke of it as Sawari Wau.*) There was a large village here, I learned later; in the darkness we could see only one camp fire. The inhabitants came out to greet us but they had no food for us or accommodation so we camped in the open and set out again before dawn, without dinner or breakfast.

That day we followed the trail round the foot of the Kanuku mountains which I had thought myself to be on the day before. By noon we reached Mr. Gore's ranch. He was away but his Indian wife gave us food of which I was by then in great need, and after resting there for the full heat of the afternoon, reached St. Ignatius before dark. The Indian and his wife took payment for their help in the form of red cotton, fish hooks, a knife, a necklace and a highly coloured celluloid comb, and rode on to Bon Success.

Father Keary was at the mission, revictualling for another tour. He was a tall, ex-army chaplain, with the

* The greater number of the Indian names on the map are incorrect, largely owing to the explorers having employed guides from tribes unfamiliar with the districts they were crossing. Also in many cases to misread notes. Even the famous Kaieteur Falls owe their name to a clerical error. It should be Kaieteuk, the *k* and *r* being similar in the hand writing of Mr. Barrington Brown who discovered them. I have adopted the prevalent usages throughout.

eyes of a visionary, ■ large grizzled beard, ■ Irish brogue, ■ buoyant and hilarious manner. He ■ off towards the hills on the day after my arrival.

I stayed on with Father Mather, resting, reading Dickens, writing letters to England, all of which were delivered several weeks after my own return, and making plans for departure. I ■ reluctant to go back to the coast by my old route, both because it is always tedious to retrace one's steps and because I felt I had ■ too much of horses and the cattle trail and not enough of the bush and the rivers, but the objections to every alternative seemed ■ cogent, that laziness had almost impelled ■ to do so, when Teddy Melville passed by with the report that owing to disease in the savannah, an embargo had been placed ■ all animals crossing at Kurupukari. I should have to go by foot from there to the Berbice. That decided me; if I had to walk, I would walk in a more interesting direction. There ■ ■ line over the Pakaraima Mountains to a village called Kurikabaru which was the furthest point of the mission itinerary. Father Mather had once made the journey and Father Keary went there annually. From Kurikabaru it ■ ■ great distance to the Upper Potaro where Mr. Winter whom I had met in Georgetown, was working for diamonds; his claim ■ the furthest point of penetration from the Essequibo. The intervening district ■ crossed by the Roraima line, up which the Boundary Commission had had their stores carried the previous year, so that the trail was bound to be still easily traceable. Moreover it was the route followed by the Clementis ■ their journey ■ years back which was described and roughly mapped in ■ copy of the *Geographical Journal*. One could take ■

horse and pack bullock for the first four days from St. Ignatius; after that it would not be difficult to recruit droghers from village to village.

I could have done nothing without Father Mather, but with his help everything became smooth. It took some time, however, to make preparations, a guide had to be procured, animals brought in, stores packed; it was ten days before I was again on the move.

During this placid interlude it is inevitable that I should often reflect on the pains and compensations of the sort of life I am living, and am going to live for some weeks more, and to contrast them with the things that are written and spoken about it. There is room for a good deal of debunking of the subject. I do not speak of the delight of travel. That is a different question altogether for it is a delight just as incommunicable as the love of home. I mean the opinion which one frequently meets that the greatest physical and mental well-being can be attained only in the wild parts of the world. We have all been shaken by it at some time or another. Perhaps we have been discussing architecture when a Voice, though from another world, has broken in with, "Well the finest roof I ever want to see is my tarpaulin, pitched in the bush beside my own camp fire, and the knowledge that there's not another human habitation within a hundred miles of it"; or discussing food, and the Voice has said, "I never enjoy anything so much as sitting down after a twenty-mile trek to a billy-can full of soup and a freshly killed piece of hartebeest cooked in an old tobacco tin." In an instant the conversation is destroyed; the little restaurant in the Dordogne, about which you were going to speak lyrically, is left unsung, and in the awkward silence such

interruptions cause, every heart begins to sink slightly and the suspicion grows whether perhaps all our ideas of good living are not a delusion, and that perhaps these decisive people from the desert *do* really know more than we about our business.

Well I have spent long enough time in the wilds to call that particular bluff. There are a hundred excellent places for rough travelling, but good living is not one of them.

Lying at ease in the gallery at St. Ignatius I began to tabulate some of the fallacies thus put forward.

For instance, *that one felt free*; on the contrary there seemed no limit to the number of restrictions with which the "open life" hampered one. Every personal possession became an encumbrance to be weighed and considered, as so many more pounds to transport; like a snowball growing into an avalanche the difficulties accumulated; additional baggage meant additional labour, which in its turn required more rations and more labour to carry the rations. As for freedom of movement, there was none before, at the moment two directions only in which it was possible to travel with any hope of arriving at a destination.

That we were untrammelled by convention; I have never understood this, for I have known quite a variety of people, of all kinds of interests and degrees of wealth, and none of them burdened by these conventions of civilisation which hears so much about. If the cliché refers merely to personal appearance, is it really more onerous to wear a bowler hat than a topee, to shave in the morning than to spend half an hour, every evening, picking ticks off one's body? The toilet of the tropics with all its hygienic precautions is every bit as elaborate

as dressing for dinner. Or if it is the strain of social intercourse, surely it is easier ■ remember the few rules of conduct in which ■ has been trained from the nursery, than to adapt oneself to the unpredictable politenesses, the often nauseating hospitality of savages ?

That ■ eats with a gay appetite and sleeps with the imperturbable ease of infancy. Nonsense. Of course after my Brazilian crossing I fell with particular relish on the bread and marmalade and eggs and fresh beef of the mission, but these things are always delicious everywhere. However hungry I ■ I found it difficult to swallow and impossible to digest the *farine* and *tasso* of the ranches. If anything, hunger makes one's sense of taste all the keener, so that one finds things disagreeable which one would at other times accept. It is worth noticing that children, the only people in civilisation who are constantly hungry, ■ also the most fastidious and can only under the heaviest compulsion be made to eat things they dislike. There was only one commodity which I found enjoyable in camp which I should not normally have liked ; strong, very sweet tea, made with condensed milk. As for sleep, I scarcely had ■ single good night in the open ; exhaustion does not necessarily make for sleepiness ; with one's whole body ■ fire with insect bites, one's face above the blanket cold in the wind, incessant animal noises ■ all sides, it was exceptional if one got two hours' unconsciousness on end.

I noted these down at the time, together with other fallacies, intending to make an article of them, but later ■ thought that perhaps ■ was stalking ■ tree and that fewer people than I supposed ■ taken in by that kind of boasting ; and later I fell ■ wondering whether there

any pleasures I found in that country which I had missed in Europe, and decided that there were two. The first was washing; not that I do not wash in Europe — that I find it distasteful, but that the mild pleasure derived from one's bath before dinner at home differs in kind rather than degree from the exquisite almost ecstatic experience of washing in the tropics after a long day's journey; it was a keen physical sensation as I have known, excluding nothing, to sit on a tacuba in a fast flowing mountain creek, dabble one's legs knee deep and pour calabash after calabash of cellar-cool water over one's head and shoulders, lie full length on the polished rocks and let the stream flow over one, eddying and cascading; even to write about it brings back a faint tremor of that full exultation, the ripple and splash of the water, the sharp tang of the germicidal soap. It was a pleasure that I renewed nearly every day; a thing to remember and aspire towards, in the blind heat and dryness and disappointment of noon.

The other pleasure I discovered, oddly enough, was reading; I rather rediscovered, for I tried to recall having experienced some pleasure in this occupation as a child. But since; I have read many books for various reasons — to acquire information; out of curiosity to know what they are like; out of politeness because I knew the author; I have dipped into most best-sellers to make up my mind whether they were justly or unjustly successful, and when I knew, I have put them aside; I have raced through detective stories because the problems they set leave me itch for completion, an instinct of the kind that makes one wish to put things straight on the chimney-piece of a strange

house; I have read books because I ■■ being paid ■■ review them, but I had not for ten years read ■ book for the mere pleasure of the process. At Father Mather's I began to read with this motive and by good chance the books he had were just those which ■■■ meant ■■ be read in that way and when I left him I took away a copy of *Nicholas Nickleby* and read it with avid relish during the ensuing journey, bit by bit while the light lasted, grudging the night every hour of her splendour and the day its toil, which kept me from this new and exciting hobby.

Alas, both these pleasures have eluded ■■ since I came back to Europe. I have read several books, for the old reasons and in the old way; I have taken numberless baths of all temperatures; but the rapture is gone, irrecapturable, except by great effort and at a long distance.

A guide ■■ eventually found for ■■ in ■■ of the near-by villages; ■ plump, docile Macushi named Eusebio, who pretended to a greater knowledge of English than he actually had and answered "Yes" to everything whether he had understood or not. He was remarkable for having ■■ personal possessions of any sort, and his first act ■■ to borrow a large part of his wages in advance to fit himself out with clothes, cup, plate, knife, tobacco, and ■ grey felt hat for the journey.

He was a soft young ■■ and he did not travel well, but I promised him that, if he gave satisfaction, ■ would take him to Georgetown with ■■ and this hope kept him going through the rough places.

Tireless to the last in his kindness, Father Mather

supplied me with provisions from his own and supervised my packing, making coverings for the more perishable things, performing prodigies of dexterity with elastic bands and waterproof wrapping; I obtained *farine* and dried meat for the droghers' rations from Figueiredo; also gunpowder, caps and shot to supplement my Woolworth trinkets in the remote villages where money does not run; also a curious substance in a flat tin, labelled Marmalade, which when opened proved to be a purplish glucose jelly of most disagreeable nature. David rounded up a pack and a strong little horse for the first days of the journey. Everything was ready by March 4th and early on the 5th we set out for Pirosha under an agreeably cloudy sky.

The trail was clear enough and after giving a lead to the across the Mocu-Mocu creek, I rode on ahead, leaving Eusebio to follow at his own pace, which leisurely and irregular, a poor two miles an hour, for the animal lumbered from side to side, browsing as he went.

The first two stages were along the way I had come, through Mr. Hart's and Daguar's ranches, and should have been without incident had I not again gone astray and in this way involved myself in the heaviest day's ride I had yet made. It was the old nursery trouble of being "too clever by half." I had left after seven and by twelve should have been within a short distance of Harts, when there was a fork in the trail, on the far side of a creek; two equally prominent tracks diverging. My natural inclination would have been to take the one on the left, and I should have been right; false ingenuity, however, supervened, for in the bed of the creek there were marks of motor-tyres. I knew that Mr. Hart's was the only car in the district and I



MACUSHI INDIAN AND CHILD AT MARAKANATA VILLAGE

round and eventually picked up the tracks again ■ the right hand road. I followed the tyres mile after mile, surprised ■ the length of the journey but confident that in the end they would lead me ■ the ranch ; there were frequent divisions in the way and I began ■ enjoy the game of finding the faint impress of the treads in the hard earth, and to applaud my ■ perception. At two o'clock thatched roofs ■ into sight, but they were not those of the ranch ; instead ■ a little Macushi village with the trail leading through it and beyond to the horizon.

The headman ■ out ■ meet ■ He knew no English and had no food, but he ■ able to point out my way to me. I rested for half ■ hour, and to entertain me, he produced a basket full of carefully folded spills of paper. These — unreadable, of course, to him — ■ all the documents that had come to the village from time to time — marriage licenses from passing missionaries, a writ to someone to appear at court at Anai, several gun licenses and an illuminated confirmation card — all charms of mysterious potency, paternally stored away in the ■ of his hut.

I rode back, ■ an acute angle from the way I had come, and finally reached Harts' at half-past five ; the little horse which had covered a good forty miles, trotted bravely to the last. I had supposed that Eusebio would be there before me and there might be some ■ ■ my disappearance, but the Harts had ■ nothing of him. While I was gratefully eating cheese and drinking ■ they explained the mistake ■ had made. I had been within ■ mile of the house when I had followed the ■ tracks, made in ■ recent direct journey with government stores between Yupukarri and Bon Success.

Eusebio turned up ■■ eight o'clock, having delayed ■■ the road ■■ cook and devour an armadillo which ■■ had caught.

I thought that the horse could do with ■■ day's rest, so sent Eusebio ahead to Daguars' and spent another night at Harts'. Mr. Hart ■■ at home this time, ■■ kindly, middle-aged American of wide experience, whose heart ■■ ■■ in woodwork than in cattle. In the evening I participated in a ■■ of curiously patriarchal piety; Mr. Hart assembled the whole household, including sleepy children, the Creole governess like Josephine Baker, and the old Wapishiana grandmother, and together we walked up and down in the moonlight, loudly reciting the rosary; Mr. Hart calling on each of us in turn to lead the devotions. It ■■ ■■ performance which in normal surroundings would have paralysed me with shyness, but here it was not embarrassing, for the oddness of the company and the moonlit landscape made the occurrence half real and impersonal.

After Daguars', which I reached without misadventure at ■■ the next day, the journey entered on another phase. So far it had been increasingly strange and slightly ■■ adventurous each week. The road ■■ ■■ starting on promised to be by far the most interesting. It ran, very roughly, parallel with the Ireng, along the west of the Pakaraima Mountains, passing first through fairly well populated Macushi country, then through ■■ uninhabited hinterland, and then to the villages of the Patamonas; then, turning east there was another empty stretch until I should strike Mr. Winter's camp, who was prospecting somewhere in the upper Potaro district. Except Father Keary, ■■ his

annual round, no European or coast Creoles █████ normally went into this country. A fair number of the men worked or had worked from time to time for Europeans, either collecting ballata or, less commonly, acting as droghers, but the villages themselves █████ untouched by civilisation except █ second █ third hand. The line of communication to Roraima temporarily established by the Boundary Commission a year before, had provided more work than usual and in consequence there █████ momentary glut of cheap hardware and Japanese cotton which gave █████ appearance of sophistication, but these perishable luxuries █████ doubt already disappearing and the communities reverting to their primitive character which █████ only very superficially disturbed.

Daguar █████ able to find me a mounted Indian to act as guide, so I sent Eusebio off that day, to sleep on the road and meet me at Karasabai, the first village.

I had ridden to Daguars' with Teddy Melville who was █ his way from Harts' to Anai. We stopped on the way at █ ranch I had always thought of as Marie Louise's, but which I found was really Manoel Luiz's; this Brazilian negro had at great age recently married █ Portuguese girl from Georgetown and had, in her honour, repainted the front of his house so that it resembled a circus booth, with Union Jacks, heads of oxen and ill-counterfeited marble. He urged █ to stay █ breakfast, but I remembered the cooking at Daguars' and insisted on going on, where █████ rewarded with fresh pork stewed in milk. We rested, in some discomfort from cabouri flies, until, with nightfall, they disappeared. Next day the guide and I set out for the hills.

From █████ onwards the government map, which had

at the best of times been barely adequate, became quite without value, nothing on it except the ■■■■ of the Ireng having any relation to the lie of the country. The trail wound in and out through belts of bush, ■■■■ dry creeks, round patches of swamp, and up ■■■■ hill passes; its general direction ■■■■ north-east for the first ten miles or ■■■■ and then, sharply turning, north-west for another ten. At first I was fired with the ambition of making ■■■■ compass traverse of the route and stopped to note every change of direction and topographical feature, and to check our ascent with ■■■■ aneroid, but ■■■■ found the conditions so diverse and the way ■■■■ intricate that ■■■■ abandoned the project after ■■■■ day or two. While it lasted, however, the practise made me observant of the country as I had not been before and heightened my enjoyment of the change of scenery. That, now I advert to it, should certainly be included with Washing and Reading ■■■■ ■■■■ of the delights of this journey. In Europe, with modern communications, you take it as ■■■■ matter of course ■■■■ you accept the shifting of canvas trees between the acts of ■■■■ pantomime; you fall into ■■■■ doze, while monotonous fields of stubble swim past the carriage window, and wake up amid lakes and mountains, ■■■■ else you travel by aeroplane when all scenery is meaningless ■■■■ ■■■■ page from ■■■■ atlas, ■■■■ flat and ■■■■ conventionally coloured, while between you and it lie fathoms of air and sunlight. But here every change ■■■■ achieved by effort. I have already remarked ■■■■ the tartarean plunge ■■■■ entering the forest and of the bird-like ■■■■ of liberation ■■■■ leaving it. Now I found myself in the greatest transition of all, the emergence from monotony ■■■■ change. For weeks I had seen nothing but savannah, sometimes ■■■■ horizon of ■■■■ further away ■■■■ nearer, but

day after day the road across absolutely plain, the dun dapple of earth and grass, the whiter of the cattle trail, the coffering of dried sedge, squat sand-paper tattered spinsterish palms. From onwards the way was kaleidoscopic. Each of the numberless turns of the path, each emergence from bush, disclosed a spectacle, sometimes a dozen hill tops like the domes of Istanbul, sometimes a bare precipice of grass, a wooded channel, a rocky ascent, a black wall of forest, a grassy saucer sheltering a cluster of huts, a horseshoe of odd, conical hills, the glitter and black shadow of water a loop of Ireng appeared suddenly on one's feet, or a mountain stream tumbling to join it in a cataract over the smooth rocks — all negligible enough from a train window, but stimulating at a time when encouragement was particularly valuable to get on from point to the next.

Except for one sharp ascent among rocks and loose pebbles where we dismounted and led our horses, we were able to ride all the way from Daguars' to Karasabai, making good time. In something less than four hours we came to a spur from which we could see a wide panorama of hill country, the Ireng, dark and menacing, far away to the left, and immediately below us to the right the village of Karasabai. We crossed the Yurore creek and arrived just as Eusebio was unsaddling the pack. The village stood half-way up a large grass-covered valley lying north and south, encircled on three sides by high hills — a stadium more than an amphitheatre, for it went back to some depth. To the north the hills were covered in bush, on the other sides bare. There were ten huts together and three roofs visible at a distance; one house stood on piles with a ladder

leading ■ its door, the others were square, single roomed structures of wattle and thatch of the sort I had seen all ■ the savannah. Eusebio had already found quarters for ■ in ■ of them; there ■ a little corral with ■ wooden paling enclosing some ■ and half ■ dozen calves; there ■ also ■ long mud house, kept empty and used ■ ■ church when Father Keary visited the place. Eusebio told me that he ■ on the same road ■ us, had slept there the night before, and that ■ should meet him at Tipuru the next day.

The chief ■ of the place offered ■ formal hospitality in the shape of *cassiri* in ■ tin bowl of European manufacture. I put it to my lips and passed it on to Eusebio. *Cassiri* is the drink of the country from time immemorial.* (It is curious how propagandists always talk as though alcohol had been introduced to the backward ■ by unprincipled traders and imperialists, referring ironically to the joint import of gin and hymn books. In point of fact almost every race had discovered it for themselves, centuries before European explorers appeared on the scene at all and used it ■ a large scale for frequent, prolonged orgies, beside which the most ambitious American parties appear austere-ly temperate.) It is made from sweet cassava roots, chewed up by the elder members of the community and spat into a bowl. The saliva starts fermentation, and the result is ■ thick, pinkish liquor of mildly intoxicating property. I ■ ■ little sceptical about the orgiastic nature of the ■ monial *cassiri* parties, until ■ the vat in which it is kept. There is one ■ in every village, according to its size. There ■ two ■ Karasabai in the back of the hut where ■ ■ quartered and I took them ■

* There ■ also another similar ■ named Piwari.

first ■ be boats, for they consisted — like ■ of the craft on those rivers — of entire ■ trunks hollowed out. Before ■ party — and Father Keary told me with regret that the tendency ■ for the parties ■ become more frequent — the whole village chews and spits indefatigably, until the vat or ■ completely full. Then after the fermentation has been under way for some time, they all assemble and drink the entire quantity. It usually takes ■ days, beginning sombrely like all Indian functions, warming up to dancing and courtship, and ending with the whole village insensibly drunk.

The people crowded out ■ greet us, one by ■ presenting themselves and shaking hands with shy manners and downcast eyes; then they formed a close circle and stared from ■ until sunset without intermission. When ■ looked directly at them they looked away, but immediately resumed their emotionless scrutiny when one was occupied elsewhere. They were not hostile or amused or, it seemed, particularly observant; they stared ■ yokels stare over gates. They watched every object unpacked without apparent curiosity; when I left the open hut ■ of them attempted to touch the baggage ■ play with it as they would have done in most parts of Africa. The only thing which moved them ■ my camera from which they fled in alarm. They ■ all unattractive, squat and dingy, with ■ of the grace ■ expects in savages. They seemed ■ have singularly little interest in personal adornment. Their hair ■ lank and ragged with ■ of the ochre powder, bone combs and skewers, the high architectural coiffes, poodle-like shavings beloved by the African. A few had lines and spots of blue tattooing on the face, but ■ of the intricate incised and embossed ornament,

the [redacted] structural operations [redacted] nose, lips and ears, the backs and breasts scarred and pitted in pattern like Venetian leather work, that makes negro beauty [redacted] formidable [redacted] [redacted]. Most of them had [redacted] hole pierced in the lower lip, stuck with [redacted] quill or piece of wood. Each had [redacted] necklace [redacted] which [redacted] strung his *beni* (a charm consisting usually of [redacted] part of [redacted] animal – tooth [redacted] bone), the religious medal he [redacted] given [redacted] baptism and [redacted] miscellaneous collection of things that had taken his or her fancy – nuts, teeth, beads, buttons, coins, gun-caps; the women had the lower part of the leg, below the knee and above the ankle, tightly bandaged with fibre or beads, to swell out the calf, which is regarded as a centre of attraction in this country as are the breasts in Europe, the feet in China, and the buttocks in most parts of Africa. A few of the men, those that had recently been out to work, wore shorts and vests but most of them were naked except for the *lap*, a red cotton loin cloth; the women, without exception, had soiled, colourless dresses.

These I learned were only worn in the presence of strangers. In her [redacted] village – which practically [redacted] her family, for the community is inextricably inter-related – an Indian [redacted] goes naked except for a little bead apron six or [redacted] inches square. Often when approaching [redacted] village I used to [redacted] the [redacted] scurry into their houses and emerge clothed; only very rarely did they appear in front of [redacted] [redacted] the droghers – for an Indian from another tribe [redacted] [redacted] another village is a stranger every bit [redacted] alarming as a white [redacted] – without their dresses and when they did so it [redacted] because they were poor and had no stuff, not because they [redacted] less modest. Still less was it because they [redacted] less Christianised.

That is another complaint of propagandists, that the Christian missionaries teach the natives ■ be ashamed of their bodies and by distributing petticoats, deprive them of all the moral and hygienic advantages of nudism. There may be ■■■■ truth in this legend somewhere. I have read accounts of the activities of American Baptists in the South Seas that ■■■■ to support it, but ■ far ■ my personal experience goes I have found the ■■■■ to be true. I have talked to Dutch, French, German and English missionaries, Protestant and Catholic, in widely different parts of the world and found them either indifferent or mildly opposed to the clothing of their converts. If they give them clothes it is because they know it is the most welcome present they can offer, for the truth is, not that dresses are forced upon them, but that the moment they have set eyes ■ ■ fully dressed ■■■■ most savages will as readily give their love to the trader as their souls to the missionary in order to imitate her; if petticoats are going at the mission house, she will be baptised, confirmed, taught the story of Noah's Ark ■ the ten commandments, to get one, for clothing appeals equally to the two usually contradictory instincts of modesty and ostentation. In the case of the Guiana Indians, with exception of those like the hostess at Daguars' who have become definitely civilised, the motive ■■■■ to be entirely modesty. They have ■ shrinking from anything that makes them obtrusive. They ■■■■ their grubby linen without any of the swagger and provocation of a negress, for it was ■ adornment, merely ■ shield between them and ■ alien world.

Eusebio reported that there were no supplies ■ be got in the village, Father Keary's party having exhausted

whatever there had been, ■ I breakfasted off biscuits, sardines and tea. My audience ■■■ left ■ but I ■■■ grew used to their presence and ■■ able ■ wash, eat, write ■ sleep without regard to them. In the late afternoon I strolled round the village, followed at ■ short distance by most of the inhabitants. There ■■■ several women suckling children, ■■ weaving hammocks, another spinning cotton ■ ■ little hand bobbin; ■ ■■■ mending a blow-pipe. I had read about these weapons in detective stories and had imagined them – ■ obviously had the authors – as short instruments easily concealed about the person. This one ■■■ about eight foot long; the dart they use is the size of ■ pen – I had imagined a barely visible thorn – but it is true that they shoot with amazing accuracy. It is also true that the Indians have the secret of the “deadly vegetable poison which defies analysis,” that appears so often in the ■■■ old-fashioned shocker, but the difficulty of obtaining the poison is gradually driving the blow-pipe out of use. Various explorers from time to time have obtained bits of the poison and recipes for its concoction but none, I think, have proved genuine; they usually contain ■■■■ magical ingredients such as ants and scorpions, but the bases ■■ without doubt certain obscure plants which the Indians take pains to hide. If, in some exceptional moment of indiscretion, they give ■ name, the enquirer is little the wiser, for it is ■■ unknown ■ botany and the ■■■ of its location is ■■■ divulged. There are, of course, numerous ■■■■ plants that ■■ poisonous and ■■ openly used for polluting streams for fishing but there is ■■■ than one that the Indians know about and will not reveal. None of them are common, but it is handed down orally among the piai men, where

they found. Father Keary encountered a party of his journey many days from their village. He asked them what they were doing and they first demurred; finally they confessed that they were on an expedition to collect a certain bark with which to make away with an unpopular in their community. He induced them to turn back but he learned what the tree or where it grew. Reliable authorities who have the arrow poison in use, describe it as a dark paste, a minute portion of which in an open wound, immediate paralysis and death. There is said to be another poison which causes insanity but the evidence for this is less conclusive. The general tendency since the introduction of firearms seems to be for poison to go out of favour among hunters and to be confined solely to the use of homicides and fishermen.

At one house a man lay in his hammock, apparently in the best of health but being attended with all the circumstances of illness. A woman with a very small baby at her breast holding a calabash to his lips for him to drink. I asked Eusebio what the matter and he explained that the man's wife had lately given birth to a child. I had read about this convention and heard it spoken of by Father Mather and the ranchers. It is prevalent amongst most of the tribes of the country, particularly the Wapishiana, and forms a curious contrast to the views on procreation taken in other equally savage parts of the world.

Here, as among most primitive peoples, parturition is a comparatively easy process; a few hours before it and a few hours after the mother will be sturdily trotting about seeing to the business of the home. The father, on the other hand is laid up for some weeks, keeps to his

hammock, is tenderly nursed, and receives the congratulations and sympathy of his relatives and neighbours. The explanation given by those anthropologists who have noticed the practice, is that the soul of the child is linked with the father's so that while it is in the precarious stage of early infancy any risk he takes may endanger it. That is purely ■ hypothesis, because of ■■■ the Indians have neither the vocabulary ■ inclination for metaphysical discussion. The fact, however, is indisputable, and it is interesting as forming a contrast to another anthropological hypothesis which became popular ■ the publication, ■■■ years ago, of Professor Malinowski's *Sexual Life of Savages*. That book, well written and superbly illustrated, enjoyed ■ success far beyond the ordinary public of anthropological students. It dealt with a universally absorbing subject and it printed love songs which general readers found agreeably indelicate. It treated conscientiously and brilliantly, of one group of savages—the Trobriand Islanders and described, among many other significant things, how they had ■ knowledge at all of the paternal contribution ■ procreation. The hypothesis based ■ this, ■■■ the familiar one, that ■■■ has evolved his social organisation from ■ matriarchal herd. Now partly because, ■ I have said, the book found its way to unsophisticated readers and partly because its title ■■■ *The Sexual Life of Savages* in general rather than of *Trobriand Islanders* in particular, countless "Outline" educated people, jumped ■ the belief that the Trobriand Islanders' ignorance ■■■ universal ■ primitive ■■■ and the herd hypothesis established.

Of ■■■ anthropologists are ■ ■■■ unprejudiced than any other scientist—or any amateur observer like myself. Most work in that field ■■■ either from

inquirers, flushed with the agnosticism of the provincial universities, and firmly convinced beforehand that man's idea of God and right conduct have evolved from the vague speculations of an animistic, matriarchal herd, from missionaries fresh from their seminaries, equally well convinced that is descended from a single monogamous, monotheistic pair, and that when beliefs prevalent it is because people have deteriorated with the ages and muddled and forgotten what clear, revealed fact. Both parties jump at any peculiarity that support their views. When Christian anthropologists discovered that the temptation of Adam and Eve by the serpent in the Garden of Eden was a myth widely held outside the Jewish nation, they pointed to that fact as proving that, since all were descended from Adam and Eve, all had the tradition of their origin, though only the Jews had been enabled to keep it completely free from contamination; the other party, less logically but no less triumphantly, said that it proved that Genesis was not an inspired book, if people who had not read it believed what it told. I have met ecclesiastics who maintained that the widespread dislike of snakes and the peculiar prominence given them above all other creatures, in many cults, also a product of the Garden of Eden tradition.

However that may be, it is worth pointing out for what it is worth that the ideas of parental responsibility of the primitive Guiana Indians* the direct opposite of those of the Trobriand Islanders, and that no theory based on the latter neglect consideration of the former.

* The Guiana Indians as far as is known never participated in all, or had any contact with, the high civilisation of the Indians in mediæval Peru.

My guide from the savannah would go no further, but Eusebio found ■■■ another mounted Indian, ■■ that next morning I ■■■ again able to ride on ahead and leave him to follow with the ox. We started half an hour after dawn and rode up the valley to where in its north-■■■ it narrowed into ■■ defile. It was marshy at the top and there ■■■ ■■ creek to ford. Some bush closed in round ■■ but the trail was clear and ■■■ could keep up ■■ steady trot; there ■■■ open patches but for the most part that day's journey was through bush, up a series of little passes, climbing all the time, occasionally ■■ sharply that ■■ had ■■ dismount. We passed ■■ Indian family on the trail, the men in front armed with bows and arrows, the women behind carrying the luggage. Once the way opened into ■■ wide valley, wooded on all sides but grass at the bottom and in the centre of it, two knolls, one crowned by a hamlet of three round houses. At eleven o'clock ■■ left the bush and came into downland, successive crests of low, grass-covered waves with the trail clearly marked across them. Another half-hour's bush ride brought us to Tipuru.

It ■■■ ■■ particularly attractive place, built on the summit of one of the little hills, where ■■ outcrop of rock broke through the grass, and extending down one side of it towards the stream after which it was named. The houses ■■■ substantially built and so compact together that the trodden earth between them had almost the nature of village streets. At Karasabai the houses had mostly been open ■■ three sides, but here the mud walls were built up into the ■■■ to keep out cabouri fly and the interiors ■■■ dark and ■■■ The mission owned a house and ■■ church in the village and some cows in the corral, for this was an important village, both by

of its size and its position, which made it the terminus beyond which horses and pack animals could be taken and consequently the recruiting place for droghers on the long march in the mountains. Here too the people from the outlying hamlets could assemble if they had children to baptise – for hazy most of the Indians may be on the more elaborate truths of Christianity, they are all keen for baptism. The head – chief is too large a term – a fine-looking old man, unique among all the Indians in the possession of a stubble of grey beard.

When Father Keary's surprise at my arrival had somewhat abated, we breakfasted together in the hut reserved for him. His presence made everything a great deal easier for me, for now I was able to entrust the horse and pack ox to the men he was sending back to St. Ignatius; he would also be able to help me collect droghers, a process over which I had anticipated considerable difficulty. That afternoon, after he had spent an hour in the Church teaching the children the rosary in Macushi, we went round the village but even with Father Keary's help and his head boy Antonio, we found droghers difficult to procure. The Indian men do not like carrying loads, regarding it as woman's work, and the women will not travel without their men, so that one was obliged to engage and feed, and carry the rations for twice the labour required. I also needed a hunter and one in the village seemed to possess arms, so that after two hours' laborious negotiations it looked as though the journey would not be possible, so any until we went into the surrounding country for additional help.

It was then that Father Keary proposed that

should combine ■■■ expeditions. He ■■■ in any case ■■ go two-thirds of the way in the ■■■ direction; his original intention ■■■ to spend three ■■ four days in each village but he could easily, he said, travel straight through and make longer visits ■■ his return journey; ■■■ the country between the last of his villages and Mr. Winter's camp ■■■ unknown ■■ him and he would like the opportunity ■■ explore it. ■■ agreed eagerly and so it ■■■ arranged. To help with our provisions Father Keary ordered a cow to be slaughtered.

This was all that ■■■ needed to overfill the cup of local excitement. The tension, apparent all through the afternoon, at last snapped. Two white men had arrived in two days, each with strange Indians, and ■■■ ■■■ was to be killed. Blank little mongolian faces creased noticeably at the ■■■ of eyes and mouth in expressions of, to them, wild emotion. The meat was chopped up, salted and packed, and the offal distributed. In an hour everyone in the place from the smallest children to the oldest grandparents, had possessed himself of a handful of steaming entrails and was trotting to and fro, in and out of the houses talking in a ■■■ that would have been extremely ■■■ in any other country in the world, but here ■■■ ■■■ almost hysterical outburst of animation.

While the village ■■■ feasting that night, Antonio told us ■■ curious story, that there ■■■ skulls and bones hidden among the rocks about quarter of ■■ mile away. He had not ■■■ them himself, nor had anyone whom he knew, but it ■■■ certain they ■■■ there. He did not know how long they had been there, but threw his head back and made the inevitable whining noise by which an Indian conveys distance, in time ■■ space, greater than he ■■■ compute. They were the bones, he said, of



ANTONIO'S WIFE

Arakuna Indians from whom the Macushis had taken the village generations ago.

It was an odd story, new to Father Keary and contrary to what is generally held about these hill Indians, that they have no military traditions. It was the only time that Antonio ever volunteered information or told me any but the most practical and generally inaccurate details of the distances and directions of streams and camping places. It is possible he was moved to boast by pride in his own village and wished to explain that it was different from the others. Usually if asked him anything about the beliefs or habits of his people he would look away and, perhaps, snigger.

CHAPTER VII

On foot in the hills—cabouri fly—Kenaima—Karto—djiggas—
Kurikabaru—Santa Maria—Anundabaru—Mr. Winter—base
of Eusebio.

WE set out ■ foot next morning ■ the Tipuru, walking ■ behind the other in ■ single file which presently spaced out until ■ straggled a good half-mile from first to last. The organisation ■ in Father Keary's hands and I had been witness to ■ of the difficulties that attended it, ■ I was not critical; there did seem, however, ■ be more people in our party than our needs warranted. First there was ■ sturdy gnome-like woman of great age, who, since she was ■ slow walker, always set off alone an hour before the rest of the party, ■ passed half-way and finished ■ constant but undismayed last. She carried nothing except her own belongings, a slab of meat, and ■ few cooking pots; her interest in coming seemed to be change of air, healthy exercise and the pleasure of observing two foreigners in discomfort; also the half-dollar ■ day in trade goods, which she received in ■ with the ■ heavily burdened members of the expedition. Then followed Antonio who ■ guide and interpreter ■ too proud to carry anything except ■ gun and ■ cutlass; behind him plodded his wife bowed double with his luggage, her own, and ■ fair share of the general rations; she ■ one of the few attractive Macushi women I saw, stocky and drab but with ■ very sweet, childlike face and long

loose hair which blew round her head ■ the hill tops. Then came Father Keary and myself, and behind four other droghers and Eusebio. He showed a clear aversion ■ taking ■ load and usually escaped without anything heavier than the things ■ needed ■ the road — hammock, towel, change of clothes, rations for the next meal, and the rapidly depleted bottle of Lisbon brandy which I had bought from Figueiredo. Even so he started reluctantly, looked pathetic all day, and often ended only ■ few paces ahead of the old woman. The heavy stuff, Father Keary's altar equipment and the farine rations, ■ borne by two brothers, very large and muscular for their race, shock-headed, with lowering cave-man brows and loud, unexpected laughs; they were more untamed than their companions, whom they seemed to despise, and ate apart from them.

They all went bare foot except over the rocks when they would produce flat sandals of palm bark. Father Keary and I wore rubber-soled canvas boots. There is ■ satisfactory alternative to my knowledge, for we ■ in a country where one is wading streams five ■ six times a day and then rapidly becoming dry in direct tropical sun, but the softness of the soles, though it prevented blistering to ■ extent, made the feet easily bruised ■ loose stones and the trellis of root in the bush.

We walked for about five hours with a ten-minute rest half-way at ■ village of five houses named Shimai, and finally made camp by the Maripakuru creek, a short distance from its confluence with the Ireng; there ■ found a solitary skeleton house, half built and then deserted, and slung our hammocks under the thatched section of its roof. Our day's progress seemed discouraging for the trail had wound in and out of the bush,

up ■■■■ suitable fords, over steep ■■■■ and round spurs, climbing all the way, so that though we had covered ■ lot of ground and ■■■■ thoroughly tired, our actual distance from Tipuru seemed negligible.

The cabouri fly here were unbearable ■ that though ■ wrapped ■ hands in handkerchiefs – gloves were ■ of the highly desirable things it had ■ occurred ■ me ■ bring – and swathed ■ necks and faces in towels, there was no sleep and little real rest until sunset. We had no lamp with us, ■ it was necessary ■ ■ by daylight, and ■ the small amount of uncovering necessary ■ enable ■ ■ swallow and to handle spoon and knife, made meals, hungry ■ we were, wholly unwelcome. The bath ■ delicious so long as one remained submerged, but any limb that appeared over the surface of the water ■ instantly covered with voracious flies. Cabouri will not attack ■ so long ■ one is in motion, and I found it ■ the whole more agreeable to walk up and down, in spite of stiffness and soreness of feet, than to lie tormented in the hammock. Antonio went out with his gun but came back empty-handed, but we still had fresh meat from the ■ at Tipuru so this did not worry ■ The truth became clear later, when ■ ■ in some need of food, that he ■ ■ a thoroughly incompetent hunter; ■ the moment he ■ out of his own country he became timid, and made excuses ■ avoid leaving the party.

The life of every Indian in these parts is overshadowed by ■ ■ present, indefinable dread, named *Kenaima*. I met plenty of people, from ■ self-confident woman graduate in Trinidad, to ■ less certain mineralogist who ■ lived half his life among Indians, who were willing ■ explain *Kenaima* ■ me and each told ■ something



MACUSHI CHIEF OF TIPURU VILLAGE
(NOTE CARSAVA BREAD DRYING ON ROOF)

different. All the books on the country mention *Kenaima*, many of its length. Its existence and importance cannot be doubted; baptism and even continual intercourse with Europeans do little to dispel its terror; it is as deep-rooted in the belief of the clothed, English-speaking Indians who work timber on Batika and Mazaruni, as of the unsophisticated people in the Pakaraima Mountains, but no one has yet discovered what exactly constitutes it. All unexplained deaths are attributed to *Kenaima*, certain places must be avoided on account of *Kenaima*, strangers may be *Kenaimas*, people may set a *Kenaima* on you, you are in danger of *Kenaima* if you associate with members of another tribe. Various ceremonial acts are necessary to propitiate *Kenaima*. It is certainly something malevolent and supernatural, that is all that can be said certainly of it.

It is as well to be highly sceptical of all statements made about primitive beliefs, particularly at the present moment when so much information is being confidently doled out to the public at third hand in the innumerable popular "Outlines" of culture. These are usually *précis*, with the qualifications omitted, of weightier books which for the most part are collections of untravelled scholars; the authority ultimately depends on evidence of explorers and travellers and only those who have personal acquaintance with the difficulties of obtaining this evidence, know what sort of value to attribute to it. At least two-thirds of it is derived from interrogations conducted either through interpreters (the most unsatisfactory form of conversation even on the simplest matters) or with an incomplete knowledge of the language. In any case the languages do not as a rule possess a vocabulary or syntax capable of accuracy, being

devoid of abstract terms. And even ■■■ possible for the primitive ■■■ to express what he believed – it ■■■ hard enough for the highly educated – he is invariably reluctant to do so. Even in the practical questions of direction – as appeared when I asked the Indian ■■■ Takutu ford whether I had reached the Sauriwau creek – his natural inclination is ■■■ tell the inquirer what he thinks he wishes ■■■ hear. This is still ■■■ the ■■■ in dealing with intimate and embarrassing questions about his private beliefs.

I encountered ■■■ very clear instance of this fallability of opinion in the case of *Kenaima*. Two Europeans who had exceptional opportunities of studying Indians, had earned their confidence, and had certainly devoted most of their life to them, gave me completely contradictory explanations of the belief. One said that it was the power of evil, the abstract malevolent and destructive principle in life, working for its own end, sometimes in concrete form either human or animal, in order to injure and kill ; the other that it ■■■ the ■■■ by which ■■■ human enemy was able ■■■ develop supernatural advantages, become ■■■ beast, like the leopard men, werwolves, etc., of universal reputation, travel immense distances instantaneously, go without food, become invisible, and ■■■ on, in order ■■■ accomplish his revenge. ■■■ imagine either of these statements finding its way into ■■■ text-book and becoming part of the material for anthropological hypothesis. Both cannot be wholly ■■■ and probably neither is. Possibly *Kenaima* is supernatural evil, always present and active, which ■■■ on occasions be canalised by magic and used for a human motive, in which case the revenger is possessed by evil to such an extent that for the time being he is *Kenaima*. That is merely ■■■ guess. I quote



FATHER KEARY RECEIVING CASSIRI FROM PATAMONA INDIAN

the two confidently definite explanations █████ being noticeable contributions to the general scepticism that is one of the more valuable fruits of travel.

Another rather █████ arduous march left █████ still depressingly close to the point of █████ departure; █████ the day before we scrambled up and down, through bush where the trail █████ almost lost and had to be cleared step by step with cutlasses, turning on █████ tracks, and wading through creeks – █████ of them the Echilifar, deep and very fast █████ that it was hard to keep our feet. As before whenever we attempted to rest, █████ were beset with cabouris. At half-past eleven █████ reached █████ hut inhabited by a negress who had been brought up by one of the servants of the Boundary Commission and left there. She gave █████ fresh milk and four addled eggs. We put up our hammocks in her house and the shade and swaddlings of handkerchiefs and towels gave █████ some respite from fly. After an hour and █████ half we resumed the march; █████ half-past four Antonio gave a loud holla, which █████ taken up by the following men, and █████ came in sight of a village of three huts, apparently nameless; there █████ a fourth partially ruinous hut which we █████ offered for █████ camp and unwisely accepted; unwisely because the place █████ alive with fleas, djiggas and ticks.

We seemed popular here for the people greeted █████ with unusual cordiality, and besides the ceremonial bowl of *cassiri* laid out for █████ the ground █████ great dish of cassava bread (not unlike █████ cake) and earthenware bowls of peppers and stewed leaf (not unlike spinach). █████ intensely thirsty and seeing Father Keary drink some of the *cassiri*, did so too. It █████ agreeable and enormously refreshing, so that always after this, when it

■■■ offered, I drank a pint ■■■ with increasing appreciation.

Attempting to check our position on the map by inquiries from Antonio, I found that ■■■ even nearer Tipuru than ■ had thought, for the two mountains Yewaile and Tawaling, marked several miles apart, are, according to Antonio, two humps ■ the same spur of hill, and ■■ whole afternoon's march had been merely to encircle this. Father Keary did not share the geographical interests of the early missionaries of his Society and ■■ wholly oblivious ■ his position ■ direction. It ■■ his habit to spend most of the day's march telling his beads, quietly following Antonio from ■■ sphere of his true activity to the next. Before supper that evening he baptised a child and married the parents.

We were able to purchase two cocks here with Woolworth bracelets, one of which we killed for supper and the other carried on alive for the next day. It is ■ curious fact that though most Indian households keep ■ few fowls they do not use them or their eggs for food; indeed the birds which live frugally on what they ■■ pick up round the houses, are barely eatable. They ■■ kept because the Indians find the crowing of the cocks at night ■ comforting sound, likely to ■■ away *Kenaimas*, and also ■ ■■ of time, for they ■■ pretty regularly at an hour's interval from midnight until dawn.

The night ■■ ■■ of exceptional discomfort, for the moonlight streamed through the ruined roof of the hut, brightly illuminating the interior, with the result that the cabouris kept awake; there ■■ also mosquitoes in fair numbers (I ■■ not using my ■■ the time and did not wish to disturb the boys to find it among the baggage) and they, with the fleas already mentioned,

made sleep difficult; the djiggas and ticks also ■ work but did not ■ immediate pain. All that ■ needed to complete the discomfort of night ■ rain, and this began in ■ steady downpour some hours before dawn, just when the setting of the moon offered ■ relief from the cabouris. The boys crowded into the hut but were little better off, for there was ■ roof of any consequence; ■ ■ lit ■ small fire and ■ scratching and shivering until daylight. Father Keary said Mass in the smoky gloom of one of the houses, and we set out again in the rain, scarcely at all refreshed by our night's rest.

That day's march ■ three long and steep climbs, with two small descents, one to cross the Yowiparu creek, and the other to ■ bush valley beside the Kowa river where ■ made camp. We stopped to eat some bananas at the summit of one of the hills but were too tired ■ trouble about having a meal prepared before supper; then ■ killed our ■ cock and ate it in the inevitable ■ of cabouris. But the bush where ■ camped ■ tall and dense so that the moonlight did not penetrate to us; the flies disappeared at sunset and ■ got ten hours' undisturbed sleep.

Next day, for the first time, ■ seemed to make real progress; the line lay ■ or less straight, mounting all the way, mostly through open country. We left camp at 6.45 and, taking an hour and a half's rest between 11 and 12.30, reached Karto, the first of the Patamona villages at 4.45. The last few hours were very painful, first climbing a hillside of sharp pebbles in the full glare of the afternoon sun, and then crossing ■ dead flat tableland of hot, iron-hard earth.

There were three houses ■ Karto and ■ open shelter

where ■ slept. The people were cheerful and hospitable, bringing out, ■ before, *cassiri*, peppers, cassava bread and vegetable. Here, for the first time, ■ met ■ wearing ■ clothes except their little bead aprons. There were ■ cabouris ■ mosquitoes here, but there was little sleep, for the old bites were continuously ■ work; we ■ ■ ■ considerable height and it ■ ■ bitterly cold after sundown; also the djiggas, inflamed by the day's walk, began to make themselves felt.

These are small insects which live in and round houses; they work their way through one's boots to the soles of one's feet where they drill holes and lay their eggs, preferably under the toe-nails or any hard piece of skin; the process is painless or at least unnoticeable among the numerous other bites that torment one. In a day the eggs have begun to grow; they continue ■ do ■ at great rapidity, raising ■ lump which is at first irritating and later painful. If allowed to remain they hatch out into maggots in the foot and serious poisoning sets in. Their removal is a perfectly simple process if performed by ■ native to the place; the eggs ■ in ■ little, onion-shaped envelope and it is essential that this shell be removed unbroken, otherwise ■ egg remains and hatches out. People who live in places liable to djiggas usually have their feet examined by their servant every evening after their bath. He opens up the hole with ■ pin and dexterously picks out the bag of eggs intact. I had ■ Antonio and his wife attending each other in this way several times during the journey. I felt two ■ three djiggas during the night and asked Antonio to get them out next morning. When he ■ to do ■ he found a dozen more and got them all out without difficulty; the operation was practically painless.



PATAMONA WIFE REMOVING DJIGGAS FROM HER HUSBAND'S
FEET

It █████ painful consequences, however, for when I came █████ walk █████ found that what with the bruising of the day before and the several small punctures, I █████ exceedingly lame in both feet. Fortunately █████ had not far █████ go and with the help of numerous swigs of brandy, and █████ sticks, I █████ able to hobble along █████ about half the usual pace and four times the usual effort, and just made Kurikabaru, the next village, before giving out, feeling that I had in some █████ atoned for whatever suffering I had inflicted on the town clerk's horse █████ the journey from Boa Vista.

We spent two nights at Kurikabaru; a little hut was █████ our disposal, built of bark and divided into four minute cubicles, dark and draughty. I spent most of the time there, lying in my hammock. It █████ a bleak village, thirteen huts scattered on █████ desolate hill top, and the people were impoverished and dour. There was rain █████ of the time and a continuous, raw wind; the height by the aneroid was a little under three thousand feet; I slept with shirt, trousers, and stockings over my pyjamas, but even then was cold at night under the blanket. There █████ dust and refuse blowing about all day when the rain did not keep it down. The people kept to their houses, huddled in the wood-smoke. The Macushi droghers █████ █████ at █████ there and my three wished to go home; loads had grown lighter – in fact █████ █████ █████ uncomfortably short of provisions – and they could easily be spared. Eusebio stayed █████ and █████ engaged █████ Patamona █████ to carry what █████ left of my things.

Paying the droghers was █████ complicated process █████ it had to be done in powder, packed in little red flasks, shot, gun-caps and necklaces; in the end I had not enough

to ■ round for I had been frivolously open-handed ■ the beginning of the journey, making presents ■ anyone with ■ amiable ■ The droghers had ■ take dollar ■ for ■ of their wages; they accepted them with the apparent lassitude they maintained in all their dealings and tucked them away in their loin cloths, from which *cache*, if they had not disintegrated, ■ seemed probable, during the journey, they would ■ doubt pass from hand to hand from the hills to the savannah until eventually they reached Mr. Figuiredo.

I also sent ■ messenger ahead to find Mr. Winter with ■ note warning him of ■ approach, and throwing myself on his kindness for provisions and transport down the Potaro.

Provisions ■ running short. When I had given the droghers rations for their return journey, we were left without meat and barely enough *farine* ■ last the boys four days. Of the personal stores of Father Keary and myself, there was ■ fair amount of coffee, ■ rapidly coagulating sugar, two cupfuls of rice, one-eighth of a bottle of brandy, a tin of sardines and a tin of salmon. There ■ nothing to be got in Kurikabaru except ■ few bananas. In these circumstances it ■ impossible to stay ■ there so ■ ■ out again on the second day. On the last evening ■ hunter came in with ■ small deer, of which ■ were able to ■ ■ a leg.

It was hunger rather than restored fitness that decided us ■ the march. The holes from the djiggas ■ now mostly healed over, but I was suffering from ■ inflamed toe where one of them had become slightly poisoned. It was astonishing and slightly ludicrous that so small ■ disability could effect one so much — a single minute limb, shiny, rosy and increased by half of ■ inch ■ the



PATAMONA CHILD AT KURIKABARU

██████████ in girth, made ████████ dead lame; walking was acutely unpleasant; ████████ only was every step very painful but the effort ████████ the rest of the body ████████ absurdly magnified ████████ that ████████ hour's march exhausted ████████ ████████ much ████████ four hours of normal progress. It ████████ annoying too for the ████████ of the expedition who ████████ obliged to adapt their pace to my limp, for it is every bit as distressing to be held back ████████ march ████████ to be pushed on.

Fortunately the ████████ stage was a very short one, and by cutting the side out of my boot to ████████ the swelling, I ████████ able to make it in four hours. We left the open hills ████████ and entered the forest which stretches from there, unbroken, to the coast; there were ████████ more invigorating changes of view, prospects of river and mountain suddenly disclosed and as suddenly shut out as though the curtain had fallen on the act of a play; no shifting of horizon, five miles distant at dawn, fifty miles distant at noon; no confidence, ████████ possibility of surprise, that urged one up the steepest and most fiery hillside with eagerness to see what was beyond; instead there ████████ a twilit green tunnel, leaves on each side and overhead, leaves in front that had to be cut clear ████████ advanced, and underfoot slippery leaf-mould ████████ a cruel network of bare roots.

We ████████ still crossing Amazon waters; the creeks ████████ crossed and recrossed ████████ tributaries of the Tumong, which in its turn ran into the Ireng, and ████████ by the Rio Branco past Boa Vista into the Rio Negro, the Amazon, and the South Atlantic. During the ████████ two days ████████ passed the continental divide where the waters ████████ flowing towards the Carribean, feeding the Potaro and Essequibo, but there was no clearly defined watershed; the ████████ dovetailed into one another, the source of

the Kowa, which is Amazon water, being north of the ■■■■ of the Murabang which ■■■■ eventually to the Essequibo; the official map of this river system ■■■■ wildly inaccurate, and what with my complaints about the complexity of the geography, and my lameness, I must, I think, have proved ■ very tiresome travelling companion to Father Keary.

There ■■■■ nothing to give beauty or excitement ■ that morning's journey, except ■ fine waterfall which we came ■ unexpectedly; ■ sunless pool, over-arched with branches into which ■ stream fell sheer, twenty or thirty feet, but no rainbows shone round it and the spray ■■■■ dull as sea mist, ■ meet the falling water.

Our camp that afternoon was the least attractive ■ had yet made. We came on an acre of cleared ground surrounded on all sides by bush. There had once been a village there in the days of Father Carey-Elwes, and since it had no name when he discovered it, he christened the place Santa Maria. Now there ■■■■ only one house and the desolation ■■■■ accentuated by the tattered ruin of a shelter erected two years back by the Boundary Commissioners, and ■■■■ reduced to ■ half-capsized skeleton of beams and rafters, and ■ few shreds of waterproof cardboard hanging forlornly from what had been the roof. There ■■■■ ■■■■ flowing water here; instead ■ patch of marsh which deepened towards the centre into ■ shallow and opaque pool. We camped in the bush ■■■■ it, slinging our hammocks among a variety of biting and stinging flies and ■ million ■ so ants, which rapidly invaded our provisions until we hung them ■■■■ from the trees.

The space round the house was unswept, littered with bones and rags and broken earthenware; the people

remarkable in their poverty and unkempt condition ■■■ among their race. The younger members ■■■ little used to visitors and hid indoors, crowding about the sides of the door, sometimes emerging and then darting back with silly giggling. The older ■■■ attempted ■■■ show ■■■ hospitality but the *cassiri* they brought out was ■■■ and only half fermented.

I had expected ■■■ find my messenger here with ■■■ reply from Mr. Winter, but there ■■■ ■■■ sign of him. The people reported that he had passed through two days before but he had his bow and arrows with him and they supposed he had ■■■ game. Nothing will deflect ■■■ Indian from following food. I had heard that often ■■■ whole boat's crew would desert if they ■■■ a herd of bush pig, and follow it for days, returning after ■■■ orgy of meat-eating to their employers and quite uncomprehending the vexation they might have aroused.

The people at Santa Maria did not know exactly where Mr. Winter was. He was within two days' journey, they said, but he had left his home at Anundabaru ■■■ years ago.

In all these depressing circumstances there ■■■ one hopeful feature — a fat little stallion trailing his halter, at grass ■■■ the house. The Indians ■■■ not only willing to hire him out, but would accept ■■■ dollar note in payment. This solved the only pressing problem which ■■■ how, in my crippled condition, I was going to get ■■■ Mr. Winter's before supplies gave out. There was, of course, ■■■ saddle or bridle, ■■■ I ■■■ out ■■■ morning soon after sunrise, a relieved, if highly comic figure, riding bare-back with Antonio leading the horse by his rope.

The bush line led up the Tumong, sometimes along

the bank, sometimes meandering away from it, three times crossing it and finally, in contravention of everything the map suggested, leaving it on our left. There ■■■ also ■■■ smaller streams to cross, all running through precipitous little glens. It ■■■ possible to ride for about half the way, ■■■ the alternate half-miles that lay along the tops of the ridges; climbs in and out of the valley had to be done on foot, the stallion being left to find his own perilous way through them, from rock to rock, ■■■ fallen or under half-reclining tree trunks, but always emerging steaming and patient on the opposing summit. The riding ■■■ far from pleasureable for the line was, in its best places, but head high for foot passengers and the breadth of a single file, and in its worst, totally obscured, so that to the normal discomfort of bare vertebrae was added constant scratching and whipping across the face, and buffeting of the legs against tree trunks which, on the injured side, were agonising. It provided, however, the necessary stimulus of expectancy, for while I was riding – face down blind ■■■ the horse's neck and nervously anticipating ■■■ jostling than ever came to the swollen foot – I longed avidly to walk, and while I walked – hobbling one pace to every two up and down the sides of the valleys – I longed to ride; and ■■■ the intervals between changes ■■■ of short duration there ■■■ frequently recurring moments of delight when I first found myself astride the sharp ridge and sweaty sides of the horse, and first ■■■ my foot again, when it became necessary to dismount. In this way after ■■■ hour's rest between eleven and twelve we reached our destination before four o'clock.

On the way ■■■ met my returning messenger who had had ■■■ sport on his journey but had taken three nights

instead of ■■■ for the sake of his own ■■■ He brought ■ large key and attached to it ■ note from Mr. Winter which read: *Delighted you are coming. You will find me half ■ day's good walking from Anundabaru. Your boy ■■■ ■ have taken a long time coming which ■■■ unfortunate ■ I sent my boat down to Kangaruma for mail at six this morning. If he had arrived earlier I would have held it back. However, ■ doubt it will return and in the fullness of Patamona time can go down again. Of course stay here with ■ till then. You have ■■■ at a bad time as I ■■■ extremely short of provisions. Here is the key of Anundabaru House where you ■■■ camp on the way, but it is probably in bad repair.*

Earlier in the year I might have regarded this as ■ major misfortune, but I ■■■ by now so well used to the checks and annoyances of travelling that I ■■■ unable to blame the messenger very heartily. After all it would have been an unnatural coincidence if I *had* caught the boat and, ■ it turned out, there was a rough fifteen miles walk between Mr. Winter's camp and the river, which I would have been in no condition to undertake ■ that moment.

For nearly a mile square round Anundabaru the trees were all down, having been demolished by ■ government botanist who wished to test a theory that ■ tropical rain forest would not burn. By good fortune the house escaped the conflagration. The earth ■■■ still black with wood ash but bracken had grown up to a height of six ■ ten feet. A wood shack stood in the centre ■■■ the Anundabura creek. It was a modest building but seemed spacious after the huts where ■■■ had slept lately, and, since it was the first building of ■■■ wood since Hart's, remarkably civilised. It was built ■ piles,

with three ■■■■ and a little verandah. An Indian, settled ■■■■ it, had utilised the lower storey as a store and shelter for live stock.

We climbed the somewhat rickety steps and as ■■■■ were supervising the arrangement of baggage, Antonio pointed out that ■■■■ trouser legs ■■■■ covered with fleas. So ■■■■ all ■■■■ clothes, and a closer scrutiny revealed that the earth between the bracken and the house ■■■■ covered with them, ■■■■ densely ■■■■ though by ants; ■■■■ creatures twice the usual size hopping everywhere in the dust. But their bulk ■■■■ their undoing for we ■■■■ able to pick them off before they had done much biting.

That night ■■■■ supper Father Keary and I finished the last of our provisions, keeping only ■■■■ few bananas for next morning's breakfast. We went to our hammocks as usual at sunset and ■■■■ peacefully asleep when, at about nine, rain began. It was then clear what Mr. Winter meant when he warned us that the house might be in bad repair. It happened that I had the ■■■■ room, and I awoke to find water pouring in on ■■■■ and to hear it ■■■■ all sides. It was absolutely dark and the matches on the floor by my side ■■■■ already sodden and useless. ■■■■ began a difficult investigation, treading carefully round the floor in the hope of finding ■■■■ dry patch. Presently I heard Father Keary awake, striking matches in his room. We lit ■■■■ scrap of ballata that ■■■■ found lying about, and by its light ■■■■ able to ■■■■ the extent of our discomfort. There ■■■■ a long dry strip in Father Keary's ■■■■ where he could hang his hammock. We assembled the ■■■■ perishable luggage — photographic films, note-books, matches, etc., under this. My ■■■■ ■■■■ completely swamped except for one corner, about ■■■■

yard square. Here the ballata gave out, but by striking matches ■■ were able to hang the hammock in ■ U with the centre, when it ■■ weighted down, just clear of the floor. Here I ■■ with my head ■■ my knees until dawn, damp, sleepless, and uncharitably intolerant of the stertorous ■■■■ which rose above the splash of the water from Father Keary's ■■■■ next door.

It ■■ still raining pitilessly ■■ dawn next morning. I went down to ■■ how the boys had fared, who had camped in the Indian's hut. They too were wet and depressed, huddled round the fire in an atmosphere thick with smoke and steam, reeking of men, animals and wet thatch.

The little creek by the house had swollen overnight into a broad, swift torrent of brown water, full of mud and leaves and dead wood. There were ■ number of larger creeks between there and Mr. Winter's and a brief consultation with Antonio convinced me that they and the slippery state of the ground made it impossible ■ take the stallion any further. Accordingly, so ■ not to hold up the expedition, ■ set out first with ■■ man as guide, expecting to be caught up by the others before I reached Mr. Winter's. As it turned out, however, I got there ■ few minutes before them, for the cold water through which ■■ were constantly passing, eased my foot and the rough nature of the line made the journey ■■■■ of ■■ obstacle ■■■■ than ■ walk — a matter of scrambling ■■■■ tree trunks and rocks, using hands ■■ much as feet; this nearly equalised ■■ chances.

I had met Mr. Winter on ■ convivial evening at Christmas-time in the Georgteown hotel, and he now greeted ■■ ■■ ■■ old friend. He was equally genial to

Father Keary, offering him every facility if he wished ■ include the camp, where a considerable village had grown up, in his annual itinerary. But with practical clarity he explained his present position. He ■ down ■ the last bin in all provisions and could do nothing towards rationing the boys. He could put me up until I found ■ ■■■■ of getting down river; he could give Father Keary ■ fowl and ■■■■ eggs for his ■ use, but he had no *farine*, dried meat ■ rice to spare. In the circumstances Father Keary had to make ■ immediate retreat to Kurikabaru which, without the handicap of my lameness, could be done comfortably in two days. There he would probably be able to collect ■■■■ and yams. It was not a very satisfactory prospect and I watched him go with ■■■■ – but there ■ no possible alternative.

About ■ concomitant arrangement I felt some personal guilt. Eusebio had to go back too. The unfortunate youth had endured all the discomforts of the march – and he made it abundantly plain that he took them ■ great discomforts – in the hope of visiting Georgetown, and ■■■■ that all the stiffest walking ■ over, and there remained, for the most part, only a leisurely river journey, well suited to his disposition, he found himself headed back, all the way he had come, through the hills again, down to the savannah and his native village. I paid him a large compensation, but both of ■ knew that the other knew that ■ compensation could really suffice. ■ am still ashamed at his betrayal, but, again, there was ■ alternative. Not only was Mr. Winter unable to feed him, but he expressly refused to have a Macushi in his camp, upsetting his Patamona workmen. The labour supply was precarious and at any

untoward happening the Indians ■■■ liable ■ melt away silently to their villages.

As he unpacked for me, Eusebio's face betrayed that reproach, wistfulness and melancholy, that only plump and rather ignoble faces can adequately express.

Poor Eusebio! I ■■ sure Georgetown would have the worst possible effect ■ him, but I hope he gets there some time, in ■■■ fashion, and does not for ■■ nurture resentment for my breach of faith.

CHAPTER VIII

Diamond washing and selling—Upper Potaro—a family—
Kaiteur—Lower Potaro—Amatuk.

We had descended constantly from Kurikabaru but Winter's camp stood at a considerable height; high enough to be cool most of the day and cold between midnight and dawn. There was usually a mist for the first three or four hours of day, which gradually lifted revealing the great bulk of Mount Kowatipu, five or six miles away in the valley. This was a long, flat-topped spur, with sharply precipitous, bush-clad cliffs. There was said to be a lake on its summit, but no white has ever been there and no Indian has first-hand knowledge of it.

The camp was built on a cleared hill-top between the valleys of the Mikraparu creek and the Murabang River, which runs into the Kopinang, officially regarded as a tributary of the Potaro, but according to Winter, who is one of the few who have visited it, the real river, carrying a far greater volume of water than the one marked on the maps as the upper Potaro. It was the Mikraparu creek which Winter was working for alluvial diamonds.

The camp consisted of a bark store-house, a little hut with thatched roof and stake walls which we used as a dining-room and a larger house under construction where we slept; this had a floor and walls made of bark, and a roof of waterproof paper. It was entirely



MR. WINTER'S CAMP

structed by a Patamona Indian named Thomas who had recently left his wife on account of her having given birth to twins — certain evidence of infidelity to an Indian mind. Winter had been there two or three years and already had a lime and a pau-pau tree bearing well; there were also a large number of hens whose eggs formed an important part of the diet. As he had warned me, provisions were low, particularly flour, rice and sugar. We began in great luxury with bacon, tinned butter, tinned milk, and toast, but after a week reduced to yams and eggs and whatever the hunters brought in.

Winter kept two hunters in his employment who were paid by results. Sometimes they would bring in two or three bush of game in a week, he said, and then there would be meat rations for the whole camp. While I was there they were unlucky, often bringing nothing at all; occasionally, however, they would kill an excellent bird called mahm, not unlike a pheasant in size and flavour, or a water rodent called labba, that tasted like pork. Bush turkey and bush pig, the other most abundant game, were of no particular flavour or quality.

Winter had tasted *cassiri* and was sceptical of my praise of it. However he had made and the two who looked after the house knew a method of fermenting it which did not involve spitting. He agreed with me that it was excellent. We also unearthed in his store a keg of crude spirit that had been sent originally for making embrocation; with brown sugar and limes it made a fiery aperitif which was used to drink sundown after the baths.

Scattered at a distance from the house were the huts inhabited by the fluctuating body of Indian workers. It was a year-old experiment to employ Indians, which

so far was giving excellent results. Negroes had to be transported to and from the coast and paid comparatively high wages on their journey; while at work they expected rations of meat, dried fish, sugar, rice, and flour. The Indians drifted into camp with wives and children, worked for a month or two until they had acquired the object they coveted, usually a gun, and then drifted back to their homes. While they were there they lived simply, happy enough as long as they had plenty of *farine* and yams and an occasional orgy of meat, and their wives and older children joined in the work. It seemed an idyllic arrangement. They were thrifless with their possessions and easily broke them or exchanged them for something of far lower value which happened to take their fancy, and so would return eventually to do another spell of work. Winter was extraordinarily clever in coaxing labour out of the villagers.

Whenever he went to Georgetown he came back with a new supply of novelties, knowing that once these began circulating in the villages and it became known that they were obtainable at his store, he would begin tapping them; he could reach himself. He had a great store shortly after Christmas with some mechanical mice, emerald green drawers, and a gramophone. When I first arrived my hat and red blanket excited great cupidity, everyone asking Winter how long he would have to work to get like them and why he had seen them in the store. There was a kindergarten atmosphere about the camp; the little wives would often stop in their work to play. Any small painful accident, such as a boy falling from a ladder and breaking his rib, was greeted with an outburst of wild merriment.



MR. WINTER'S HUNTER
(NOTE ■■■■■ IN CHILD'S HANDS)

These Indians mostly from the Kopinang banks and had seen missionaries, policemen or white men of any kind before. They arrived naked and went away heavily swathed in calico; a few took hats and high-heeled shoes, but I got the impression that they were attracted by them as toys rather than finery and that when they got home they would be put away and played with, not flaunted before their less travelled neighbours. It is astonishing to see how easily these very simple people adapted themselves to the mechanism of the trommel but they worked without system, as though it were all part of a game; when shovelling earth they would throw one spadeful high and the next low, sometimes several in quick succession, sometimes a few very slowly. I never saw less coercion in any country in the world. Had any been attempted there would have been no complaints or protests; the Indians would simply have left the wages due to them, packed up and gone away, as they have often treated impatient travellers in the past. They have by nature and upbringing no sense of authority. In all languages the first word a child learns is "sir"; few of the Indian languages - I think none - have any sense of subservience or respect. The chiefs of the villages have no power and no privileges. They are elected for any sort of eminence - in the village because the man was cited as witness in a police case and came back from Anai with such prestige that the former chief was instantly deposed - and exercise no judicial function. Nor are they supported by contributions from the village. You do not in Indian villages find those luxurious old men, common enough in Africa, squatting in ease among a dozen wives and sniffing an ammonia bottle while his hut is piled up with yams and

manioc by his subjects. Every [REDACTED] and then a black "pork knocker" will work [REDACTED] way up into Indian country and attempt to assert himself in a village, taking up with the women and bullying the men. The Indians are afraid of the blacks on account of their size and strength and for a little will do what they are told. Then they lose patience and one of two things happens; either they all decamp silently and leave him to starve or he is stealthily murdered, poisoned or shot full of [REDACTED] in the back. Several black adventurers have come to a bad end in this way, but that has been mostly in Macushi country. The Kopinang people have lived unmolested.

While I was at Winter's, however, a report came in of a party of "pork knockers" who were working down the Yawong on the other side of Mount Kowatipu; they had conscripted the Indians whom Winter had sent for from Baramakatoi to cut lines round his concession and were using them as droghers. They were said to be making for Brazil.

The law against black immigration into the native [REDACTED] can, of course, rarely be enforced. No policeman or officer of the government had ever passed through the country where I was. The nearest policeman was at Bartika, three days' journey away and the nearest magistrate at Bon Success. It was in fact an extremely lonely camp, with no neighbours at all. The nearest white man was at Mazaruni station, a few miles from the coast. There was no through traffic; I was the first guest Winter had entertained since his settlement there. Moreover it is getting more lonely. Ten years before there had been East Indian and Portuguese stores all down the Potaro between Kaieteur and Kangaruma.

Now there are ■■■ at all. There had also been ■ German planter at the mouth of the Chinapowu whose estate was largely marked on the map, but, as I ■■■ to find later, there was no trace of it except ■■■ bamboos and fruit trees, smothered and reverting to wilder forms in the bush.

I spent ten days waiting for Winter's boat to return, during which my foot slowly mended. After a week the nail ■■■ off and I was perfectly well; until then I kept to my hammock most of the day.

Winter ■■■ a delightful host and companion; middle-aged, genial, cynical, personally optimistic. Race, pure white Creole; education, technical, engineering and surveying mostly in the United States and Canada; married, with wife and family in Barbadoes whom he visited whenever he could; religion, Anglo-Israelite; politics, socialist turned conservative on finding himself a capitalist and employer of labour; general contempt and suspicion of all officials; generous, businesslike, witty; personally optimistic for he always examined his sieve with the expectation of finding the large stone that ■■■ going ■■■ make his fortune.

As my foot got better I often went down with him to the workings. He was washing for alluvial gold and diamonds in the bed of the Mikraparu, and to do this had dammed and canalised the little creek. The dam was made of timber and mud, held together with ropes of bush vine and attached to the surrounding trees, and the piping that conducted the water to the trommel was of hollowed wood. With the exception of ■ small hand-pump, worked by ■ deaf and dumb girl, the entire mechanism had been constructed ■ the spot. It had

the appearance of a drawing by Mr. Heath Robinson, but it seemed to work. The trommel was a horizontal, cylindrical sieve made of wire gauze of varying mesh; it was rotated by hand, two girls spinning it with wooden handles. The gravel from the bed of the stream was brought up in barrows and emptied into the trommel where it was washed down by the water from the stream. As it went down all the heavier and smaller stones fell through into a tray. At the end of the sieve only large pebbles emerged and were shovelled into a heap by two more girls. The hard work of digging out the gravel and wheeling it up to the trommel was done by their men.

The gold dust, being the heaviest constituent of the mud in the tray, went to the bottom and passed through a mercury trap where it was collected; any larger nuggets remained with the mud, in which would also be the diamonds, and were washed down into another fine sieve called a jig. This was gently swayed up and down in a tank of water until all the soluble matter had disappeared. The product was a sieve full of very fine gravel containing whatever diamonds and gold nuggets had been in the load. The whole process was exceedingly simple. I never knew if the Indians had any clear idea of the purpose of the various tasks set them; they performed them in the half listless, half frivolous manner I have indicated. A black foreman named Gerry worked the digging with the men and generally kept operations in motion in Winter's absence. His main job was to get the Indians out of their hammocks in the morning and to blow a whistle for them to stop at the end of the day.

The only skilled labour was Winter's, in searching the jig; it was full of beryls, clear white stones which



MR. WINTER'S DIAMOND WORKINGS AT MIKRAPARU CREEK

when and glistening seemed to indistinguishable from the diamonds. These on the days I went, invariably minute and singularly unimpressive. A good day's yield six or seven carats in twenty-five stones, most of them tarnished and opaque, and two three fragments of gold the size of rice grains. These all put carefully into a cartridge case, weighed and sealed up. (The diamonds cleaned up with hydrofluoric acid and boiled in *aqua regia* before they reached the market.) I never acquired any skill in picking them out though the usual maxim is that though it is possible to mistake another stone for a diamond, it is impossible ever to mistake a diamond for anything else. It is said to have a metallic sheen that belongs to other stone, but I always needed to have it shown to me before I recognised it.

The diamond trade of Guiana is on a far smaller scale and organised in a haphazard fashion than in the great diamond fields of South Africa. There no large corporations controlling the output; no smuggling and illicit diamond buying. The workers all solitary prospectors handfuls of friends trying their luck in . . . Very few of them have any knowledge of geology; they work up the rivers and creeks until their rations exhausted or until they have made a strike good enough to warrant their return to the coast. They then celebrate their good fortune in a few months' high living and either look for other work, drift back again the bush in the hope of another . . . No fortunes have been made there. The market is in the hands of Jews and Portuguese in Georgetown, most of whom have agents buying for them up river. If an agent is thought by his employers have paid too much for

stone, he is liable ■ have ■ returned ■ him and ■ price stopped ■ of his wages. Some sellers make ■ habit of going from one jeweller to another with their diamonds in the hope of finding ■ higher offer. They ■ completely in the hands of the buyers because few of them understand the subtleties of colouring that determine the value of a stone. But they gain little by their negotiations, for ■ buyer does not like to take a stone after he has ■ made an offer, for it means that his bid has been the highest and that he is paying more than his rival's valuation.

There ■ certain stones of known defects that have been changing hands in the colony for years. As soon as any newcomer appears in the market they are all offered to him. One in particular is famous; ■ twenty-four carat ■ of negligible value on account of flaws and discoloration. The original discoverer boiled it in *aqua regia* and produced on it a series of minute surface cracks which gave it ■ dull whitish appearance, that on casual inspection might belong to ■ good stone in rough condition. A buyer paid \$100 a carat for it ■ ■ gamble (the normal value would be \$210) and had it returned to him by the merchants ■ headquarters. However, he was able to sell it again before the story got round, and since then it has been bought and resold four ■ five times, the last holder being faced with ■ dead loss until some stranger appears to take it off him. It is like the knave of clubs in the nursery game of "Black Sambo."

Winter had innumerable stories of the country which he used to recount with superb pungency ■ supper, and ■ we ■ in ■ hammocks in the evening. There was one of a cook of his who had come to him highly qualified, ■ fugitive from her home. She had been



MR. WINTER'S DIAMOND WORKINGS AT MIKRAPARU CREEK

taken by ■ missionary at an early age and taught the domestic ■ and virtues in ■ Georgetown college. At adolescence she became haunted by the claustrophobia that affects all Indians when they come to town, and, urged by her instinct, made for her native bush. But she was by now neither civilised ■ primitive. She arrived after long absence ■ her mother's house, armed with her certificate for proficiency on the pianoforte, umbrella in hand, ■ bonnet ■ her head. She found a strange, naked ■ who was her mother, eagerly welcoming her ■ ■ one-roomed hut, full of wood-smoke and poultry. More than this she found ■ naked young ■ who had been selected by her mother as ■ husband. Numerous suitors appeared, attracted by the glamour of her urban education, but all equally savage, uncouth, and unacceptable. A common enough situation in countries where educational experiments are practised, but in this ■ distinguished by a less usual conclusion. The original suitor, at last losing patience with her superiority and aloofness, married the mother and the ■ proceeded to make the hut still less habitable for her. So she packed up her umbrella and bonnet and musical diploma, and enjoyed a brief elopement with ■ passing catechist. After which she became Mr. Winter's cook and so excellently had she been taught ■ her coast school that he ■ ■ the moment making strenuous efforts to retrieve her from the holiday she ■ taking among the negro boating community down river.

■ most of Winter's stories depended for their point ■ his belief in the incompetence and dishonesty of all government officials, and so cannot suitably be transcribed here. Moreover they need the surroundings in which they were told, the lamplight in the half-finished

shed, the surrounding camp-fires of the Indian huts, and beyond them, invisible in the dark, but sensible, the forest and the dominant cliffs of Kowatipu.

Much of this chronicle – perhaps, it may seem, too much – has dealt with the difficulties of getting from place ■ place. But that seems to ■ unavoidable for it is the preoccupation of two-thirds of the traveller's waking hours, and the matter of all his nightmares. It is by crawling on the face of it that one learns ■ country; by the problems of transport that its geography becomes ■ reality and its inhabitants real people. Were one to be levitated on ■ magic carpet and whisked overnight from place to place, one would see all that was remarkable but it would be ■ very superficial acquaintance, and, in the ■ way, if one leaves the reader out of one's confidence, disavowing all the uncertainties of the route, the negotiations, projects and frustrations, making of oneself one of those rare, exemplary dragomans who disguise every trace of effort and present themselves before their employers with ■ plan completely tabulated, hampers packed, conveyances assembled, servants in attendance, ■ may show them ■ pretty spectacles and relate ■ instructive anecdotes, but one will not have given them what ■ originally offered when ■ ■ engaged – a share in the experience of travel, for these checks and hesitations constitute the genuine flavour.

I feel this strongly about those who travel in aeroplanes. They take with them, wherever they go, from start to finish, a single series of problems involving fuel, mechanism and air conditions. The features of geography and the character of the people ■ involved incidentally and indirectly. If ■ travels in the ■ of the country,

taking horses or ■ where possible, walking when necessary, getting rations and labour where one can, using regular services of transport when ■ comes ■ them and fitting out expeditions of one's own where no facilities exist, ■ identifies oneself with the place one is visiting in ■ way that is impossible to the, perhaps, ■ courageous fliers. That, anyhow, is how ■ was travelling. There had hitherto been two main phases of the journey; by horse in the cattle country and by foot in the hills. Now ■ was to start ■ another, by boat down the rivers.

The situation ■ this: all regular service for mail and the delivery of stores, up stream from the coast, stopped at ■ depot named Kangaruma on the lower Potaro. It was there that Winter's stores were awaiting him. Between Kangaruma and the mouth of the Chinapowu — a day's march from his camp and the highest navigable point of the river — there were three obstacles, Amatuk falls, Waratuk falls, and the Kaieteur. It was possible by unloading it and carefully paying it out on ■ rope to get ■ boat over Waratuk. Amatuk and, of course, Kaieteur ■ impossible. Thus, in getting down, three separate boats ■ needed, one from Chinapowu to Kaieteur, another from Kaieteur to Amatuk, ■ third from Amatuk to Kangaruma. In getting stores up stream droghers ■ needed to carry them from landing ■ landing; in the case of Kaieteur this ■ a formidable process as there ■ a two-mile portage, half of which ■ ■ sharp precipice. The river above Amatuk is uninhabited so that the labour had to be sent down and brought back with the stores. It was again needed ■ carry them from Chinapowu to the camp up a fifteen-mile trail part of which was also precipitous. Thus

"sending down for stores" was not so simple a process as the words suggest. There was a further difficulty—that Winter owned only two of the three boats needed; between Amatuk and Kangaruma the only boat belonged to a Portuguese, ominously named Diabolo; there was no reason to suppose that it would be the Amatuk when it arrived; moreover its position of absolute monopoly and able to exact any charge he liked for its use. Winter's negro foreman spoke gloomily of Diabolo's ill-nature.

I mentioned in the last chapter that Winter had sent a man down to Kangaruma for mail. He now eagerly awaited his return so that the boats could be used to send down for stores. On the eighth day the boat came, a black named Sobers, and on the tenth we started out. There was difficulty about collecting droghers; some passing Indians recruited but two of them fell sick before starting so that in the end two men had to be taken away from the digging. Eventually the party consisted of these two, Sobers who was now being sent back to the coast for good, his usefulness being superseded by the Kopinang Indians, the black foreman Gerry, myself, and a Patamona family consisting of father and mother, a boy aged eight or nine and a dog, which they insisted on the last minute in bringing with them; they were an unattractive trio, apart from their dog. The boy was slatternly and ill-favoured even for one of her race, with gross bandy legs, filthy and ragged clothes; the males wore only the lap; they had hair like chows and furtive, unfriendly eyes. I engaged Sobers, a muscular ruffian with gold teeth, as my own servant; the Indians were under the orders of Gerry, and I was in the position of passenger in the boat.

The walk from Mikraparu to Chinapowu through bush line and creeks, little different from the way from Anundabaru except that there one steep descent down which slipped from tree trunk to tree trunk, and that I was longer lame. I wondered how the droghers managed to get their burdens up that hillside on the return journey.

At Chinapowu there a few remains of a Boundary Commission store house and deserted Indian huts rapidly falling to ruin. Of the plantation house of Holmia no sign remained. The Clementis their Roraima journey in 1916 recorded that it then just visible in the encroaching bush. The cleared ground now ten feet deep in a second growth from which emerged in gross and rudimentary forms a few descendants of cereals and fruit trees. There one building, deserted, but still more or less intact, which had been built as a trading station at the time when all that district was being worked for ballata; it was substantially built of sawn wood; inside there still the shelves which the stock had been displayed, a counter and a rusted weighing machine. The floor filthy and crawling with djiggas, but I swept the counter clear and lay on that until time after the blacks and me, the Indians turned up with my hammock. I had divided the copy of *Martin Chuzzlewit*, giving Winter, who out of all reading matter, the part I had read. I enjoyed the last chapters until the light failed and it was necessary to try to sleep.

The boat a small flat-bottomed craft just capable of carrying all and the luggage. It beached high above the level of the river; we got it emptied out and afloat after daybreak but were obliged to delay

until half-past seven by the Indian family who insisted making up the fire which they had kept smouldering under their hammocks all through the night, and cooking themselves maize cobs they had found in the bush — relics of Holmia. Kaieteur was a full day's journey and it was important to make it before nightfall, so that this delay aggravated the antipathy I had felt for them since I discovered their intention of travelling with a dog. (This sentiment may perhaps shock animal lovers, but let them remember that Indian pets are far more odious than those of Europeans, and are the chief disseminators of fleas, ticks and djiggas.)

Our boat not built for speed, and weighed deep as we were, made slow progress even with the help of the stream. The two blacks rowed with immense energy, taking a pleasure in their strength. They fitted up rowlocks, tied paddles to wooden poles, and used them as oars. The two Indian boys paddled fairly consistently but the family sat in the stern with their dog, making little attempt to help. The one complained that he was sick, and when we handed paddles to the woman and boy they trailed them listlessly in the water for a little, then shipped them, and opened a clothful of putrid fish which they proceeded to munch for the greater part of the day. They are bush people unused to the river. I would gladly have left them behind, but they were needed as droghers for Winter's stores. Instead I attempted to set a good example by paddling myself and within half an hour regretted it bitterly. It has always seemed to me an unnatural form of propulsion in which one is pulling against one's own weight and exhausting half one's strength in forming a fulcrum. After an hour, I gave it up and the Patamonas went



BOAT ON UPPER POTARO

placidly eating their revolting food, occasionally offering some particularly uneatable morsel ■ the dog.

The river banks ■ absolutely devoid of habitation; familiar walls of forest ■ either side. Sobers and Gerry exchanged reminiscences of various camping grounds (for it is ■ two or three day journey up stream from Kaieteur to Chinapowu) and of phenomenal conditions of flood ■ drought that they had known. The water ■ deep sepia in colour and absolutely smooth; every feature of the forest wall ■ duplicated there in minute detail – trunk and bush vine, tangled undergrowth, bare root, and the blossoming cumulus of the summit – except when, occasionally, ■ reached ■ place where the surface ■ dappled with real petals, white, yellow and pink, floating past us, strewn profusely and irregularly from the tree-tops over a large area, single and in clusters, as though they were flowering in ■ meadow.

It was after five when we reached Kaieteur. The landing was, of course, ■ way above the falls and leaving the boys to ■ the boat and bring up the luggage, I hurried forward ■ foot to ■ them before it ■ dark. I had expected to be led there by the sound, but it ■ scarcely perceptible until one reached the brink and ■ there, so great ■ the depth, that only ■ low monotone ■ to greet one.

The path led ■ ■ rock plateau totally unlike the surrounding country, bare except for cactuses and ■ few flowers, scattered with quartz, pebbles and sponge-like growths of crystal. A faint path led to the edge of the precipice and there ■ natural platform of rock allowed me to lie and study the extraordinary ■

It has been described in detail by several travellers.

I had arrived ■ the best time of day, for then, in late afternoon, the whole basin and gorge ■■ clear of mist. The river ■■ half full. Some visitors have toiled up ■ find only a single spout of water over which they were able ■ stand astride. A Russian artist went there ■ paint it and ■■ obliged to fill in the river from photographs and his imagination. That evening the whole centre of the lip ■■ covered, and the water gently spilled ■■ it ■■ though from a tilted dish. At the edge it was brown as the river behind it, rapidly turning to white and half-way down dissolving in spray ■ that it hung like ■ curtain of white drapery. It fell sheer from its seven hundred odd feet, for the cliff had been hollowed back in the centuries and the edge jutted over ■■ immense black cavern. At the foot dense columns of spray rose to meet it so, that the impression ■■ received was that the water slowed down, hesitated, and then began to reascend, ■■ though a cinema film had been reversed. And not only reversed, but taken in slow motion, for just ■■ aeroplanes hurtling like bullets through the air seem from the ground to be gently floating ■■ the sky, ■■ the height here delayed and softened the vast fall, like the mason's at Buckfast, who, tumbling off the triforium, is said ■ have been caught half-way down by angels, lowered gently and ■■ ■■ his feet in the nave, breathless, bewildered but unhurt.

The basin below ■■ heaped with rocks, reduced by distance to little boulders, among which the water was breaking in ■ high sea, wave after ■■ ■■ in being by the fall, emanating outwards and smashing into spray against the banks like an incoming tide; half ■ dozen ■■ so minor cataracts ■■ visible down the gorge before the river regained its tranquillity.

But ■■■■ remarkable, perhaps, than the fall itself was the scene in which it stood. The scale was immense, so that the margin of forest shrank to a line of shrub and it was only by ■ effort that ■ could remind oneself that these ■■■■ the great ramparts that had towered ■■■■ all day. The cleavage, too, was so abrupt that it appeared unnatural; ■ though two sections in ■ composite panorama had been wrongly fitted; above ■■■■ the placid level on which ■ had travelled, below for miles ahead the river could be followed, shot black and silver ribbon, gently winding between bush-clad hills, and here, in the middle ■ sharp break where the edges, instead of coming together, lay apart, clumsily disjointed.

■ lay ■ the overhanging ledge watching the light slowly fail, the colour deepen and disappear. The surrounding green ■■■■ of density and intenseness that can neither be described or reproduced; a quicksand of colour, of shivering surface and unplumbed depth, which absorbed the vision, sucking it down and submerging it. When it ■■■■ quite dark I found my way back to the others.

There ■■■■ ■ rest house in fair condition at the top of Kaieteur; this, and the one at Amatuk had been erected ■■■■ the time when ■ Georgetown company projected ■ regular tourist service, which had ■■■■ to nothing. (A lady named Mrs. McTurk carried on the good will of the ■■■■ and made the arrangements for anyone who wished to go up, but no caretaker ■ store was now kept at the falls.) There ■■■■ ■■■■ ■■■■ and initials carved ■ the walls and Sobers said it was lucky ■ leave ■■■■ trace of one's occupation. Gerry, however, was sceptical, saying, "Most of dey is dead already."

The most recent inscription was dated in January of

that year and said, "*Alfredo Sacramento, Author and Globe Trotter starved here.*"

I had heard this man's story from Winter. He was ■ Portuguese who appeared in Georgetown about Christmas time, with no claims to authorship but many to globe-trotting. He was supporting himself by selling his own portrait ■ signed post cards. It is not ■ unique means of livelihood. I met ■ bearded Dane in Venice doing the ■■■■ thing and every ■■■■ and then I ■■■■ ■ brief interview in the English papers with ■■■■ who has successfully circumnavigated the earth in this way. Most of these travellers carry ■ recommendation, genuine or spurious, from some university professor, which, translated into six languages, proclaims their literary promise. Armed with this and a suitcase full of photographs of themselves in exploring costume, they set out to travel round the world. ■ I do not know if any of them ever write books when they get home; their experience is mostly a monotonous round of café touting, incarceration and deportation, rows at consulates and immigration offices. (We gave the bearded Dane a list of addresses at which he should call when he ■■■■ to England, but I have not yet heard of his arrival.)

Sacramento quickly exhausted the patience and curiosity of Georgetown and, taking up with some blacks in a ■■■■ shop, ■■■■ told golden legends of the hospitality of the Indians and ranchers. Asking how he could get there, he was told that from Kaieteur there was a clear road through to Brazil, with Indian villages at every halt, where, though they ■■■■ unlikely to buy his portrait, the people would feed him and help him ■■■■ his way. The poor fellow believed all that he was told and began making enquiries about how he could reach Kaieteur.

As it happened there ■■■ in Georgetown ■■ the time ■ Canadian doctor, who, reading about Kaieteur in ■ magazine devoted to popular education, had impetuously taken ■ passage to Guiana and asked at the railway station for ■ ticket to the falls. Disgusted but undeterred by discovering the expedition to be ■■■■ elaborate than he had expected, he ■■■ then arranging for ■ boat ■ take him up. The boat captains are always glad of ■ extra hand upstream, ■■ Sacramento ■■■ able to get ■ free passage on condition of his using a paddle and helping with the droghing. Accordingly he travelled up with the doctor to Kaieteur, who, when he had looked at the falls and taken a spool of photographs, descended (incidentally cracking a rib en route) and left Sacramento alone at the top. On looking about for the road he had been promised he found it to be non-existent; the plateau ended in impenetrable bush; the only craft at the landing was Winter's boat — far too heavy to be launched, still less propelled upstream, single-handed. So Sacramento found himself without provisions or hope of escape until the next tourist should arrive, perhaps in six months' time.

Fortunately for him Winter ■■■ ■■ his way back ■ the diamond working, and ■■■ days later met Sacramento, by then within ■ fine distance of death from starvation and poisoning from the roots and berries he had been attempting to eat. Winter fed him by increasing degrees, until he was restored to ■ fair state of health and then sent him back to Amatuk in his boat, but Sacramento took the kindness with little gratitude. With returning strength, his wanderlust came back to him and he could not be persuaded that the road into Brazil ■■■ quite impossible to a ■■■ without guides and provisions, that

the Indians were scattered, elusive and quite unwilling, when they were able, to give food to strange foreigners. Sacramento went back under compulsion, alive, but full of resentment.

It is interesting to notice the reactions to Kaieteur of the different members of the party. Gerry and the two Indian boys had seen it before and did not bother to look again. Sobers had been there several times but always went down to see it, with genuine interest and appreciation of its beauty. The Patamona family had never been there before and did not take the smallest interest in it; instead they lit the fire under their hammocks and lay alternately dozing and munching *farine* without putting themselves quarter of a mile out of the way to see it. One book says that the Indians think it haunted by *Kenaima* and when obliged to approach, put pepper in their eyes to blind themselves, but I heard no confirmation of this and I think the Patamonas' reluctance to visit it came from mere stupidity and lack of imagination.

Next morning, as it was light, Sobers and I went down to the fall, this time not to the ledge from which I had seen it the night before, but down another line to the water edge, where we were able to walk on dry rocks to the very brink of the fall. But at that time the whole basin and gorge were full of mist that blotted out everything except the rush of brown water at our feet.

As before the bad family lay long in their hammocks and pottered about with wood embers and fish preparing a lengthy breakfast. There was a long, very steep, rocky descent to Tokeit landing. On the way we passed a snake, coiled up asleep in the trail; bathed at the bottom

and launched the boat, while ██████ waited for the Indians ██████ arrive. The boat proved to be of the ██████ build ██████ the ██████ ██████ had used the day before, but about half its size, and quite incapable of carrying the whole of the party. Accordingly I decided to leave the bad family behind. They accepted their desertion with the same brutish apathy they had shown to all ██████ proceedings. They had rations for two days which ██████ ██████ able to supplement very slightly from the remaining stores. It would be at least five days, probably longer, before Gerry returned from Kangaruma to relieve them. Meanwhile they ██████ better off than Alfredo Sacramento because they had a bow and arrows with them; there was fish in the river and no doubt game in the bush, and, anyway, periodic fasts are common enough experiences in their own villages. Nevertheless I felt guilty, though less guilty than I had done in the case of Eusebio. Some of the party *had* to be left behind and they and their dog were the most easily spared. They squatted at the water's edge and watched us till ██████ were out of sight.

Lightened ██████ ██████ were, the boat ██████ dangerously low in the water and our progress correspondingly slow. It was windless in the gorge and ██████ ██████ began to feel the weight of the descent we had made. Days and nights grew hotter, the ██████ ██████ approached the coast. After Kangaruma there ██████ ██████ need for a blanket at night, and the briskness ██████ had felt in the hills gave way ██████ lassitude.

The gorge which from Kaieteur had the appearance of a single cleft, ██████ revealed on closer acquaintance as a series of wooded hills. The river wound in and out between them until at ██████ we reached Waratuk. At

high flood these rapids could be shot, but ■ this ■ it had the effect of a dam of boulders spanning the river with, between each, ■ sharp cataract, bubbling ■ rocks in ■ series of little ■ and whirlpools. The broadest channel ■ on the left bank. We drew the boat in, unloaded it and carried the stores ■ ■ sand beach that lay in still water quarter of ■ mile down stream. Here the Indians and I waited while Gerry and Sobers handled the boat ■ the rapids. They tied ■ rope to the stern, hitched it round ■ boulder, and Sobers took the end, slowly paying it out under Gerry's orders. Gerry stood at the bows, and, sometimes jumping from stone to stone, sometimes wading thigh-deep in the surf, steered them between the rocks. If he had lost his footing and loosed his hold on the boat for a moment it would have been swept sideways and stove in. The whole operation took about twenty minutes and was done with astonishing dexterity and absence of fuss. In a few days' time Gerry would have the far more difficult task of taking the boat up, without Sobers' help. I wondered how he would manage it; so I think did Gerry, looking contemptuously at the frail little Indians who would be his companions.

We cooked lunch ■ the sand-bank, rested for an hour and then reloaded the boat and set out again. In about three hours ■ reached Amatuk, where the boat ■ further ■ to ■ and had ■ be beached. It ■ here that trouble might be expected with Mr. Diabolo. He lived ■ the right bank ■ way below the falls and ■ just walking down to shout across to him, when ■ heard ourselves hailed from behind and saw ■ blacks fishing among the rocks. They appeared to be friends of Sobers'. In a few minutes one of them appeared in ■

boat and rowed to . . . He . . . youth of unmistakably criminal appearance, but he greeted Sobers and Gerry with great warmth, and bowed politely to me. We got into the boat with . . . baggage, picked up the fishermen and presently made for a house on the further bank. This I gathered was Mr. Diabolo's boat, and that . . . Mr. Diabolo's house. Mr. Diabolo . . . away so both these had been appropriated by . . . friends who . . . "pork knockers" washing the gravel of a worked-out diamond claim that had once belonged to Winter. They were . . . open-handed to us as they had been to themselves, and readily let us have the . . . of the boat for our journey to Kangaruma on the next day. The presence of the friendly "pork knockers" was doubly fortunate for it solved the problem which had worried my conscience far more than the discomfort of the bad Patamona family; that was, how, without them, Winter's stores . . . to be carried in reasonable time up Amatuk and Waratuk. For a dollar a head the blacks agreed to take on the job.

They also urged us to sleep in Mr. Diabolo's house, but there . . . another slightly lower down, belonging to Mrs. McTurk where I thought I should be . . . comfortable. It . . . built . . . a small island in the middle of the river; at flood time this was submerged and the house stood up in midstream on its piles just clear of the water. There was . . . armchair there, the first I had . . . for many weeks, and . . . shelf of tattered novels. An aged negro lived there as caretaker and exacted . . . toll of one dollar for its . . . The vampires in that house . . . thicker than I had found them anywhere, and kept me awake by fluttering round my mosquito net and hanging to it, trying to . . . a way in.

But the armchair and the ~~arm~~ of old novels, and the caretaker with his white woolly head, his respectful English, and his expectation of a tip, were all symbols of the return to civilisation ; another phase of the journey – the last but one – was over.

CHAPTER IX

Lower Potaro—Kangaruma—regular communications—Tumatumari—Rockstone—Wismar—Georgetown—conclusion

COMPARED with the country above Kaieteur, the lower Potaro was populous and civilised. With every splash of the paddles ■ drew nearer to Georgetown; not only in mileage, but in the air and temper of ■ surroundings; ■ passed other boats manned by negroes in felt hats, vests and short trousers; ■ were among people who spoke English and knew the value of money; the buildings ■ graced with corrugated iron, wire fencing, asbestos and sawn planks. But it was a broken and fugitive civilisation. Not here those firm, confident tentacles of modernity that extend to greet the traveller, no tractors making their own roads as they advance; no progressive young managers projecting more advanced stations of commerce, opening up ■ districts, pushing forward ■ settlements and ■ markets; ■ uniformed law asserting itself in chaos.

Instead ■ had overtaken civilisation in its retreat; the ground ■ worked out, the beaches sifted of their treasure, the trees bled to death for ballata, the stores derelict and once busy stations in process of evacuation. It was as though modernity had put out sensitive snail-horns and, being hurt, had withdrawn them. The wounds in the bush—surface scratches negligible to its vast bulk and power—were healing over and the place

returning ■ the solitude and desolation frivolously disturbed.

There had ■ been ■ police station below Amatuk and ■ handful of shops trading ■ and rations for gold dust, diamonds and ballata. These and the clusters of shacks round them had all been abandoned in the retrocession; the rain and the ants and the omnivorous bush ■ pulling them to pieces and overwhelming them. They were very ignoble ruins; not the majestic facades of the burned out houses of Southern Ireland or the overgrown capitals and pediments that remain when ■ real civilisation comes to its end; bare frames of rotten timber and misshapen tin or most desolate of all, rusted and half buried heaps of useless machinery. For it ■ a destructive and predatory civilisation that ■ meeting and it was disappearing like the trenches and shell-craters of a battlefield.

At Kangaruma I came ■ more into contact with regular communications, though not, let it be said, communications highly organised or very direct. Here the river made ■ wide detour over impassable waterfalls. A broad trail had been cut through to Potaro Landing and the intervening creeks roughly bridged, forming the straight five-mile base of a triangle. A lorry covered this journey when freight warranted and the state of its mechanism permitted it. As often ■ not the vehicle was out of order and passengers ■ obliged to walk; this had been the ■ when Sobers was last there and he expressed little confidence in its restoration. From Potaro landing ■ launch with an outboard engine plied, when required, to Tumatumari, where there was a village and another waterfall. From Tumatumari there ■

another motor launch owned by an East Indian which journeyed irregularly ■ Rockstone on the Essequibo where there had ■ been a village and a railway service ■ Wismar. Trains ■ longer ran, but the line remained and it ■ possible to cross either by foot ■ on ■ truck pushed by hand or, if one ■ fortunate, drawn by ■ motor tractor. Wismar ■ ■ place of some importance ■ the Demerara, where ■ American company were working for bauxite, and from there bi-weekly steamers sailed to Georgetown. It will be clear that the journey involved ■ number of somewhat uncertain connexions. It was, however, ■ definite line of communication and in that differed from anything I had encountered since leaving the Berbice.

There was also an alternative route down the government's ■ road to Bartika, which met the Potaro ■ ■ point between Potaro landing and Tumatumari. Something has been said of this enterprise already and comment is apposite here after what ■ have written above about the abandonment of the district, for there certainly ■ ■ large scheme making for its development. The next ten years ■ ■ will show which will be victor, the bush or the road. It is being done at what is, for the Colony, great expense and ■ a considerable scale, and is, in its way, ■ courageous attempt. If it is unsuccessful, the defeat will ■ the abandonment at any rate for ■ generation, probably for ever, of the "opening up" of the interior; the colony will resign itself to the limits of ■ single strip of seaboard and leave the huge territory ■ its back in the primeval integrity it has always maintained.

The arguments against its success may be stated as follows: that it was too late in coming; twenty years

earlier when the Potaro was busy with "pork knockers," ballata bleeders and quite a few gold seekers working on a large scale, it might have been of immense value; by the time the district was too far decayed and its infrastructure exhausted; that it was unreliable from an engineering point of view, being built on sand and a substructure of roots; it would subside and collapse, the sand would wash away and the government would be faced with the alternative of abandoning wheeled traffic and spending a great sum annually in its upkeep; that since it was a ridge road - running partly along natural hills and partly an artificial viaduct - there was little prospect of settlers cultivating its borders for the difficulties of transporting produce to the road level would counterbalance the advantage of rapid transit; that even as it was the journey to Georgetown took as long that way as by Rockstone, for it was a two-day land journey and boats ran from Bartika just as infrequently as from Wismar; moreover the journey was one of excruciating discomfort with every possibility of a breakdown on the way and an indefinite delay in the bush. At the time Sobers, who found a mournful pleasure in multiplying the probable difficulties of our journey, had summed up, there had been a two weeks' cessation of the lorry service.

Whatever the ultimate advantages of the new road, I decided in the immediate circumstances to follow the river route. At Kangaruma the prospect was more hopeful than Sobers had led me to expect, for the lorry to Potaro landing was in order and due to start the next day and there seemed a very fair chance of all the connexions fitting and my getting to Georgetown the fourth day.

There was a shop at Kangaruma where I was able

■ purchase tinned butter (at seven and sixpence ■ pound), corned beef, potatoes, fairly fresh bread, tobacco, beer and other luxuries. There ■ ■ clean ■ kept for visitors, ■ good bathing creek, and, most remarkable of all, ■ pile of newspapers, the weekly edition of an illustrated daily dating to within a month of my arrival. I had not ■ ■ English paper later than the one I read ■ board ship ■ the morning of my departure from London. Inevitably, I had come to expect every kind of public and private cataclysm, the ■ of governments, outbreak of ■ and revolutions, the assassination of the royal family, the marriage, parenthood, divorce and death of all my friends. Actually, of course, it was a very short time and nothing of particular note had occurred. But, even so, it ■ the newspapers more than anything else that brought it home to ■ that my journey was coming ■ an end.

It did not end without ■ remaining asperities. Now that ■ was back among organised communications, all the civilised man's impatience at delay returned and each stage of the journey was attended by several hours' irritation during which the various negroes responsible came nearly to blows in apparently pointless altercations. The lorry, however, was ready next morning and after immense preliminary agitation of the starting handle, ■ got to work and arrived at its destination late but intact.

I left Gerry and the Indians sorting out Winter's stores. Sobers, ■ arranged, ■ ■ with ■ From Amatuk onwards our relations became remote; he said "Chief" ■ often when talking to me and took off his cap whenever he ■ into ■ ■ where I was sitting. There had been an inevitable transition; ■

no longer travelling companions but servant and master.

There was a long wait at Potaro landing while the captain of the boat and the driver of the lorry attempted to remove part of the engine which had to be taken down river for repairs. They quarrelled with each other, shouted at the tops of their voices, and knocked the car about in a way which must have shortened its already precariously protracted existence, by a considerable time. Finally when they had battered and hammered and wrenched and roared themselves hoarse they gave up the attempt as hopeless and chugged down towards Tumatumari. After a mile or two we came to Garroway stream, the present terminus of the government road. There was a large labour camp there and the beginnings of a bridge which, if the venture continues, will carry the road up to Kaieteur. We took on mail and a couple of passengers, and reached Tumatumari at half-past one.

This had once been a considerable town with a hotel, police station and resident commissioner; now it was a ramshackle negro village of wooden huts sprawling along a street that led past the falls between the two landings. The only man of any authority was an aged and amiable black who combined the offices of postmaster, school-teacher and preacher. There was a little rest house, maintained for the use of visiting officials, to which he gave us the keys. He also lent me a book of colonial history written by a black schoolmaster and printed in Trinidad – a curiously ingenuous tale of the finally reconciled conflict of love and duty.

There were a dozen or so stores in the village licensed to buy gold and sell rum, and a chattering black population



POTARO LANDING

who lived ■ supplying recreation to "pork knockers." At first there was ■ ■ of the Rockstone boat whose time-table, apparently, depended ■ the caprice of the bosun. "Him starts when him likes," they said. "De captain very old and him can't ■ much."

But it arrived that afternoon with ■ handful of passengers. One of them had brought a live pig. He ■ a speculator in pork and it ■ his practice to borrow a pig from the station clerk at Rockstone, bring it to Tumatumari, and lead it about the village, hawking for orders. The price ■ fixed beforehand. If he got enough orders for ■ to cover his fare and show ■ small profit, he killed the pig, divided it up and returned to pay its owner. If there ■ no adequate market he led the animal back disconsolately to Rockstone and ■ the loser by the expense of his journey. On this occasion the demand was brisk and the beast's death squeals disturbed the evening.

I went down to the landing, interviewed the all-powerful bosun and extorted a promise from him to sail ■ ■ the next morning. It ■ essential to make an early start if ■ ■ to catch the Wismar boat which left early the following morning. A few hours' delay might mean the loss of four days in ■ town where I ■ reluctant to spend much time.

Next morning ■ seven, however, there was ■ sign of activity ■ the landing and the stores we ■ taking down still lay in a heap ■ shore. I recruited Sobers and some other passengers and got the boat loaded, but the bosun still maintained that he was unable ■ start; the mail-bag had not arrived. I went up to the post office and found it open and the postmaster still accepting letters which arrived in a dilatory fashion every quarter

of ■ hour. Everyone who bought a stamp felt herself – they ■ mostly ■ – entitled to a 'several minutes' gossip. A large printed order announced that on the mornings when the mail left, the office was closed ■ 6.30 a.m. I pointed this out and demanded that the bag be sent down to the boat. The postmaster explained that he had to sort all the letters out first, complete his ■ correspondence and seal up the bag. Meanwhile more negresses ■ slopping up, flat-footed, to buy postal orders and chat about their families. It ■ eleven before we started.

It took us ten hours to Rockstone without a stop. I sat under ■ awning amidships. There ■ one other first-class passenger, a large black lady of some importance, for she wore shoes and gold earrings and travelled with a bag of peppermints and a thermos flask of cold water. The ■ at the back lit a fire on a piece of iron and cooked luncheon on the way.

After we reached the Essequibo the scenery became painfully monotonous – a vast breadth of water bordered by forest and broken occasionally by islands of bush. After dark my companion slept, sprawling ■ most of the seat.

Rockstone ■ another deserted town. The large wooden house built as an hotel ■ falling ■ pieces; beside it stood the barrack-like quarters that had been used by the railway employees. The only inhabitant, now, ■ the East Indian railway clerk who lived in the derelict station. I explained to him the urgency of my catching the Demerara boat. He ■ full of sympathy, remarking that Rockstone and Wismar were full of mosquitoes and no place in which to spend unnecessary nights. He ■ himself shaking with fever. It ■ im-

possible, however, to get across that night, he said, the tractor was out of order.

I interviewed the bosun of the boat who seemed the only active one about, and the driver of the tractor; they were both despondent until I offered five dollars between them if I caught the ship next morning. That secured their attention and for some hours grinding noises, sudden reports and showers of sparks came from the stationary tractor. Meanwhile the other passengers, about twelve in all, had retired to sleep, some of them hanging hammocks from convenient posts, some making little nests among the heaps of goods which littered the yard, others sprawling, without compromise, across the platform. I put up my hammock in the booking office and went to sleep with little expectation of getting to Wismar until next day.

Just before midnight, however, the clerk, began running up and down the platform shaking the sleepers and blowing his whistle. The tractor was working.

We all climbed with our luggage into an open trolley and with a grating of gears and overwhelming issue of exhaust gas, the tractor started.

It was a slow journey; the oil lamp that hung in front of the engine illuminated little except the two rails. The bush had originally been cut back a distance of either side to protect the line from falling timber, but a luxurious second growth had grown round and over us. Two or three times we were obliged to stop and remove fallen branches and shovel away a small landslide. After two hours it began to rain heavily and the passengers drew a tarpaulin sheet over us, completely excluding air and view. Personally I would have preferred a wetting. I have occasionally heard it debated whether negroes have

■ unpleasant smell. These certainly had. I have also heard it said that white men are as disagreeable to them ■ they ■ to ■ ; I can only say that my fellow passengers ■ this journey ■ not fastidious and showed ■ desire ■ avoid proximity with me. I could have wished they had.

But it ■ to an end ■ last, ■ little before dawn. The Demerara boat was at the quayside and ■ went on board ■ ■ and dozed in ■ ■ of mosquitoes.

Next day ■ sailed downstream with ■ perceptible ■ breeze in our faces, past sugar plantations, bovianders' huts, East India villages — characteristic riverside scenery. Early that afternoon I was back in Georgetown.

The journey was over and here the book might well come to an end. There is no occasion for ■ purple passage. I have written throughout ■ direct and, I hope, accurate, day to day chronicle of ■ journey over strange ground and in circumstances that were — to me — unusual. It makes ■ claim to being a spiritual odyssey. Whatever interior changes there were — and all experience makes some change — are the writer's own property and not a marketable commodity. I had been ninety-two days away from letters and the normal amenities of life; it had been ■ arduous and at times arid experience. I had taken enough strenuous exercise and suffered enough mild privation to justify myself in spending the rest of the year in indolence and self-indulgence. I had ■ grave breach of faith — poor Eusebio — on my conscience. I had contributed to the generally distasteful impressions of the ■ Prior of Boa Vista. I had caused unavoidable pain to several horses. I had added to my treasury of eccentrics the fantastic figure of Mr. Christie. I had seen several different sorts of life being led —

rancher, missionary, Indian, diamond hunter -- which I could █████ have imagined. I had added another small piece to the pages of the atlas that were real to me. For █████ it had been abundantly worth while and it seems to █████ conceivable that an account of it may interest some people. I might make this the end of the book and abandon for good the nursery where I have been working, but I think it would be in keeping with its desultory nature, to complete it, as it has been written, with █████ final, unambitious paragraphs about the remaining days.

There █████ time to wait in Georgetown before there █████ a ship home. Even then I had to break my voyage at Trinidad. In Georgetown I met █████ agreeable character called "Professor" Piles who lived by selling stuffed alligators. He had a peculiar fascination over them and over snakes, and loved both species dearly. He used to go out to the creeks and call them; it went greatly against his sentiments to kill them, but he had to live. Once he had been put in prison at Mazaruni and had secured release by the simple expedient of summoning every snake in the neighbourhood. Every morning when the warders █████ to his cell they found it full of assembled reptiles. They would accompany him at recreation and █████ work to the great detriment of good order and discipline, so that eventually the Governor was obliged █████ order his release. I bought █████ crate full of baby alligators from him to take back as presents to the children of my friends. They have not been █████ great success. One child said, foolishly I thought, "Is it █████ rabbit?" and another -- a girl -- called it "Evelyn" and proceeded to █████ it █████ pieces; █████ third said, "Is it real?" and █████ being told that it was asked, "Is it dead?" His interest █████ then exhausted and he returned to his bricks.

■ renewed the acquaintances ■ had made ■ Christmas and paid formal calls of farewell, feeling ■ little patronising towards the town dwellers who let themselves be shut in between forest and sea, and ■■ adventured into the country behind them.

"Have you been up ■ Kaïeteur?"

"Not exactly, but I passed it coming down, ■ my way back."

There was the inevitable disappointment of getting my films back from the developers. I had taken two dozen rolls and packed them with every precaution Father Mather or I could devise, but many of them had got spoiled during the journey. A large number, too, ■■ failures as pictures. Without exception all the photographs taken in the bush and in the cattle trail were worthless, pitch dark with glaring blots of light. Even those in which the exposure had been successful were disappointing, for compositions which had seemed full of interest when I took them, now appeared drab and insignificant. All the landscapes, except those of river scenery, were despoiled of their beauty, the hills flattened out, the trees barely distinguishable, the valleys without form. The Indians had been, as I have described, elusive subjects, but I had taken ■■■■ snapshots of them unawares, by the device which I may commend to the ■■ careful manipulations of others facing the same problem; you stand or sit facing ■ right angles to your subject and holding the ■■■■ sideways, turned towards them, looking ahead but ■ the time glancing down and sighting the lens by means of the finder. The Indians rarely suspected that they were being taken, ■■ alas, would these suspicions have been aroused in ■■ cases if they had ■■ the results, which, though amusing

souvenirs, ■■■ few of them recognisable as portraits and fewer still reproducible as the illustrations for which they ■■■ primarily intended.

Out of 192 exposures, barely fifty ■■■ of any real interest.

From Georgetown to Trinidad in a smart Canadian ship, full of seasick boy scouts on their way to ■ Jamboree, and convivial golfers going to a tournament in Barbadoes.

It was Holy Week so I went out to stay in a little Benedictine monastery in the hills behind Port of Spain. They maintain ■ guest house where many people go for the cool air. I sat at table with a lady anthropologist with whom I involved myself in acrimonious arguments about Indian character. She would not have it that they were cowards, and she knew much more of them than I did; but I still think I was right.

I feel that this book has too much ecclesiastical flavour already; otherwise I could well devote a chapter to the Easter festivals at Mount St. Benedict. On Good Friday pilgrims of all races and creeds assembled to kiss the Cross from all parts of the island – Hindus, Protestants, Chinese – and for Easter morning the church and courtyard of the monastery were packed with ■ dense crowd. They began arriving at about ten on Saturday evening and all through the night ■■ could hear the chatter and the padding of bare feet as they climbed past the guest house. The first Mass was said before dawn and after it the great crowd formed a procession, each carrying ■ candle in ■ coloured paper shade. As the only white man present I found ■ torch thrust into my hands to carry in front of the Host. The line of coloured lights wound down the steeply graded hill road and climbed back again to the Church and just as we reached the summit again

day began to break over the hills and there was a feeling of New Year.

From Trinidad I took a comfortable Dutch ship Southampton. There was some slight discussion at the Customs as to whether stuffed alligators were dutiable as furniture, but in the end these were allowed in as scientific specimens. After a change of luggage in London I went straight to Bath and spent a week there alone in a hotel. Spring was breaking in the gardens, tender and pure and very different from the gross vegetation of the tropics. I had no building that was stable or ancient for nearly six months. Bath, with its propriety and uncompromised grandeur, seemed to offer everything that was most valuable in English life; and there, pottering composedly among the squares and crescents, I came finally to the end of my journey.

LABELS

A Mediterranean Journal

by EVELYN WAUGH

Illustrated Cheap edition (Duckworth's Georgian Library) *Demy 8vo, Cloth, 5/- net.*

"Why is Mr. Waugh's travel book such a comfort to a reader whose roots are deep in the nineteenth century? . . . It is impossible to chuckle over "LABELS" without remembering Mark Twain and his innocents. For though Mr. Waugh's manner is his own and his century's, sticky label with brand-newness, his matter is Mark Twain's . . . like him he is always instinctively solemn at funny moments and funny at solemn ones. He likes people for their absurdities and their littlenesses. . . . Admirable good feeling . . . admirable good sense. . . . I haven't read so ridiculous and humorous a travel book since 'The Tramp Abroad' itself!"—Clemence Dane, in the *Book Society News*.

"This is the sort of delicious book that makes writing reviews a luxurious occupation."—*Daily News*.

"Very good fun."—*Bystander*.

"It is wonderful what a lot of interesting information Mr. Waugh can impart while he is making a laugh."—*Tatler*.

"With 'LABELS,' Mr. Waugh has definitely established his reputation as a minor critic and master of modern travel writing and a very amusing and intelligent writer."—*New Statesman*.

GERALD DUCKWORTH & CO., LTD.

1 HENRIETTA STREET, LONDON, W.C.2.

REMOTE PEOPLE

by EVELYN WAUGH

With illustrations and maps

Cheap Edition (Duckworth's Georgian Library).
Demy 8vo, Cloth, 5/- net.

"A very good book indeed . . . An account of the author's experiences in Africa where he went to see the Emperor of Ethiopia crowned. . . . It is certainly the best travel book I have read for years."—Frank Swinnerton in the *Evening News*.

"So readable and amusing, it is wonderful how he just manages to give you a lot of information (just the information you want to know), while at the same time entertaining you in just the way you want to be entertained by a travel book."—*The Tatler*.

"He is wonderful company in strange circumstances."—*Sphere*.

"The very best possible sort of book about this sort of journey. He is extremely witty. He observes with insight, and where his curiosity is touched enquires with discrimination . . . his manner is earnest, subjective, delightful."—*Spectator*.

ROSSETTI: His Life and Works

by EVELYN WAUGH

Cheap Edition (Duckworth's Georgian Library).
With Portraits. Demy 8vo. 5s. net.

"Keen in perception, right in temper and attractive in method. A great man is here subjected to the batteries of a fresh and vigorous young mind."—Mr. John Drinkwater in the *Daily Telegraph*.

GERALD DUCKWORTH & CO. LTD.

3 HENRIETTA STREET, LONDON, W.C.2.

